

a Sheddin, Derramamiento.
a Sheep, Oveja.
a kind of Sheep in the West-Indies that carry burdens, Ovejas del Perú, or Llamas.
a weather Sheep, Carnero capado.
a Sheep or goats walk, Cañada.
a flock of Sheep, Ganado Ovejuno, Manada de ovejas.
a little Sheep, Ovejuela.
a Sheeps skin, Piel de oveja.
Sheeps dung, or turdles, Cagarútas.
pertaining to Sheep, Ovejuno.
a Sheep core, Majada.
a Shepherd, Ovejero, Pastor, Zagal.
a Shepherd's boy, Pastorcillo, Pastorcico, Moço de pastor.
a Shepherd, or head shepherd, Rabadán, Mayoral.
a Sheperdess, Pastora, Zagala.
a Shepherd's dog, Malin.
a Shepherd's hook, Cayado.
a Shepherd's cottage, Chóca, Cabaña.
Sheep sheering, Tresquiladura.
a Sheep shearer, Tresquilador.
a Sheeps pluck, Aladura de carnero.
a Sheet, Sábana.
to shroud in a sheet, Amortajar.
a little Sheet, Savanilla.
a winding Sheet, Mortaja.
a sheet of paper or parchment, Un pliego de papel, O pergamino.
a Sheidrake, Catarráda.
a Shell, Cáscara, Concha.
to take out of the Shell, Descascarar.
taking out of the Shell, Descascaramiento, Descascaradura.
Shell fish of any sort, Conchas de mar, Conchas de pescado.
a Shelf to lay things on, Basal, or Basar.
a Shelf in the sea, Arracife.
Shelfs or heaps of sand in the sea, Baxos, Arenales.
a Shelter, Cavaña, Cubierta.
to shelter, Guarecer.
Shelter'd, Guarecido.
a Sheriff, Alguazil mayor.
a Sheriff of a city, Alguazil mayor de ciudad.
an under Sheriff, Lugarteniente del alguazil mayor.
to make a Show, Hazer apuñencia, Sacar en público.
to show, Demonstrar, Mostar.
a Show, Demonstración, Muéstra.
Show'd, Demonstrado, Mostrado.
a Shower, Demontradór, Mostrador, Enseñador.
Showing, Demonstración, Muéstra.
Showen, Mostrado.
a Shide of wood, Rája de leña.
a Shied, Escudo.
a great Shied, Pavés.
a little Shied, Escudillo.
to shield, Cubir, Defendér.
Shielded, Cubierto, Defendido.
to Shift, or provide for, Proveer.
to shift from place to place, Mudar y pasar de lugar en lugar, Trocar lugares, No estar de asiento.
to shift or change, Mudar.
to Shift, or get by crafty shift or other devices, Echar el cuervo, Hazer trampa.
a Shift, Artimaña.
a Shifter, Echarcuervo.
Shifting, Artimaña.
a Shilling, Dos reales de plata.
a Shindle, vide Shingle.
to Shine, glitter or glister bright, Reluzir, Relumbrar, Refulgir.
a Shining, Refulgencia, Reluzimiento, Relumbramiento.
Shinningly, Con refulgencia, Con relumbramiento.
a Shingle, or tally of soft wood, Rája de leña, Tablilla.
the Shin, Espinilla.
the Shin bone, Canilla.
to take Ship, Embarcarse.
a Ship, Nao, Nave, Navío.

the carcass of a Ship, Armazón de navío, Cuerpo de navío.
Shipped, Embarcado.
a great Ship, or carrack, Carraca.
a little Ship, bark, or pinnace, Naveta, Navichuelo, Navezilla.
a light Ship, call'd a foist, Fragata, Zabra, Patáje, Fústa.
to Ship, or lay on shipboard, Embarcar, Poner abordo.
Shipping, or putting into a ship, Embarcadura, Embarco.
a merchants ship, or ship for burden, Navío de mercante.
pertaining to a ship, Naval.
the master of a ship, Maestre de nao.
a Ship boy, Grumete.
a Ship-wreck, Naufragio.
a Ship-boat, Batel, or Vatél.
the sides of a ship, Quadernas.
a Shire, Condado.
a Shirt, Camisa.
a shirt of hair, Cilicio.
a little shirt, Camiseta.
a great shirt, Camison.
to Shite, Cagar.
Shitten, Cagado.
a Shiter, Cagador.
to be-shite, Cagar.
a weavers Shittle, or shuttle, Lançadéra.
a Shittlecock, Rahilte.
a shittlecock, or uncertain person, Mudable, Inconstante, Cabeça de viento.
a Shive of bread, Revanada de pan.
to shiver, or quake for cold or fear, Temblar, Ertremecerse.
a shivering, Tembladura, Tremadura, Ertremecimiento.
to shiver, or split in pieces, Hazer rájas.
shiver'd in pieces, Hécho rájas.
a Shock of wheat, Hácina de trigo, Montón de trigo.
a shock, or justle, Encontron.
to shock, Alterar.
shock'd, Alterado.
to put on a Shoe, or shoes, Calçar los zapatos.
to pull off ones shoes, Descalçar los zapatos.
a high shoe for the country, Abarca.
a wooden shoe, Idem.
Shod, Calçado.
shod with high shoes, wooden shoes, or starrups, Abarcado.
shod as horses are, Herrado.
to shoe with iron, Herrar.
a Shoemaker, Zapatero.
a shoemaker's last, Hórma de zapatero.
a shoemaker's tack nail, Broça.
the shoemakers craft, or where they sell shoes, Zapateria.
a Shoe, Zapato.
a horse shoe, Herradura.
shooting of a horse, Herramiento.
a child's shoe, capatillo.
a Shoe sole, Suela de zapato.
a corked shoe, or slipper, Chapín, Alcórque.
a place where such shoes or slippers are sold, Ghapinería.
a blow with a shoe or pantofle, Chapinazo, zapatazo.
the upper leather of a shoe, Empeine de zapato.
a Shoosng horn, Calçador.
a Shoale of fish, Cardume.
to Shoot, or cast forth, Echar fuera, Brotar, Salir.
a sure shooter, or good marks-man, Certo.
to shoot an arrow out of a bow, Flechar, Tirar una flecha.
to shoot with a cross bow, Tirar con balista.
to shoot with a gun, Tirar, Disparar.
the shot of a gun, Escopetazo.
the shot of a cannon, Cañonazo.
the shot of an arrow, Flechazo.
to shoot off ordnance, Disparar.
to shoot thorow, Pasar con saeta, Flechar, o bala.

a shooter, Flechador, Flechero.
to cut off Shoots or young sprigs, Cortar tallos.
a shoot, sprig, or young twig, Tallo.
a Shop, Tienda, Oficina.
a shop-keeper, Tendero.
a Shore, or outward brink, Orilla, Bórde, Ribete, Ribera.
a shore, or bank of the sea, Orilla de mar, Ribera, Bórde.
to come to shore, Arribar.
come to shore, Arribado.
a coming to shore, Arribada.
to Shore, or prop up, Apuntalar.
a shore, or prop, Puntal.
shored or propped up, Apuntalado.
Shorn, Tresquilado.
to Shorten, Acortar, Abreviar.
short, Corto, Breve.
short witted, Corto de entendimiento.
shortened, Abreviado.
shortness, Cortedad, Brevedad.
shortly, Brevemente.
somewhat short, Brevecito.
to keep short, Enfrenar.
short-winded, Asmático, Falto de respiración.
very shortly, Muy en Breve, Muy presto, Con mucha brevedad.
to be short, Ser breve, Abreviar.
a Short, or reckoning, Escote.
a shot with a cross-bow, Ballestazo.
a Shovel, or spade, Açada, Açadón, Pála.
a fire shovel, Badil, or Badila.
a little shovel, Palita.
a shovel full, Paletada.
I Should, Yo deviera.
a Shoulder, Hombro, Espálda.
upon the Shoulders, or back, Acuestas, En los hombros.
to shoulder, Espaldar.
a shoulder blade, Espaldilla.
to Shout, or make a shout and cry, Gritar, Bozear, Hazer algaraya.
a shout, Grita, Bozeria, Algaraya.
shouting, Gritando, Bozeando.
a great Shower of rain, Una grande agua, Golpe de agua.
showry, rainy, or full of showers, LluviOSO, Llovioso.
to Shred, or to cut, Revanar, Cortar, Demenuzar.
a shred, Revanada, Cortadura, Retazo.
a shredding, Revanada, Retazadura.
a shred of cloth, Chía, Néga.
Shrewd, Astuto.
shrewdly, Astutamente.
shrewdness, Astucia.
to Shrift, Confessarse.
to Shrike, or squeak, Gritar.
a shrieking, Grito, Grita.
Shrill, Agudo, Sutil.
to Shrink, or pluck in, Encogerse, Acortarse, Retirarse.
shrunk, Encogido.
a shrinking, Encogimiento.
to Shroud, or to cover, Cubrir, Defendér, Amparar.
to shroud himself under another man, Acaparrarse, Acogerse.
a shrou that a dead body is wrapped in, Mortaja.
shrouded by another man, Acaparrado, Acogido, Defendido.
one that shrouds dead bodies, Mortajador, Mortajero.
Shrove-tide, Antrúejo, Carnavál, Carnastoliendas.
Shrove-tuesday, Mártes de carnaastoliendas, de Carnavál, or Antrúejo.
a Shrub, Mata, Breña, Maléza.
a shrubby place, Breñal, Maléza, Matorrál.
to Shrug, Encoger los hombros.
to Shuffle the Cards, Barajar.
to Shun, or to avoid, Evitar, Esquivar, Huir, Apartarse.
shunned, Evitado.
shunning, Evitamiento.
to Shut, Cerrar.

to shut up, Encerrar.
to shut in, Encerrar.
shut in, Encerrado.
shutting in, Encerramiento.
to shut out, Escluyr.
shut out, Escluído.
a shutting, Cerradura.
a weavers Shuttle, Lançadér, de Texedór.

S I

a Sibil, Sibila.
Sice on the dice, Séys en los dados.
to be Sick, Estár malo, Estár enfermo,
Estár doliente.
to fall sick, Adolecér, Enfermár, Caér
malo.
sick, Doliente, Enfermo, Malo, Falto de
salúd.
sickness, Dolencia, Enfermedad.
the falling sickness, Epilepsia.
the green sickness, Opilación.
sickly, Mal dispuesto.
a Sickle, Hóce, Hoz.
a Side, Lado.
the side of a bill, Ladéra.
on this side, Aquénde, a ésta Banda, a ésta
Parte, Désta parte.
on the other side, De la ótra parte, Allénde,
De la ótra banda.
sidelong, De lado.
side by side, Apár.
on both sides, De entrámbas partes, A cada
lado.
on every side, De cada parte.
by the river side, Orillas del río.
to side with one, Tomár parte.
a side, Apárte.
Sider, Cidra.
to lay Siege to a town, Cercár, Alediár, Po-
nér sitio.
a siege of a town, Alédio.
to raise a siege, Alçár cámpo, or Cérco,
Descercár.
the siege raised, Descercado.
one that raises a siege, El que descérca,
Descercador.
the raising of a siege, Descérco.
to sift or searse meal, or the like, çarandár,
Cernér.
sifting, Cernidúra.
sifted, Cernido.
a sifter, Cernedór.
siftings, Cernidurás.
to sift a business, Examinár, Inquirir.
sifted into, Examinádo, Inquirido.
to Sigh, Solloçar, Suspirár.
a sigh, Suspiro, Solloço.
sighing, Suspirando, Solloçando.
Sight, Vista.
a sight, or show, Espetáculo, Cosa de vér.
sightless, Ciego, Sin vista.
sightly, Vitoso.
sightly, Vitosamente.
quick sighted, Agúdo de vista.
in the sight of the world, A vista de todo
el mundo.
a Sign, Signo, Señál.
to Signifie, Significar.
signification, Significación.
signified, Significado.
signifying, Significando.
to Sign and seal a writing, Firmár, Signár,
Sellár, Rubricár.
a sign, or token, Señá. Señál.
a sign in heaven, Signo.
the twelve celestial signs, Los dóze signos
del zodiaco.
a signed bill, Memorial firmado, Cédula
con firma.
a Signet, or seal in a ring, Sello de anillo,
Sello privado.
to keep Silence, or to be silent, Callár, Guar-
dar silencio.
kept silent, Calládo.
silence, Silencio.
silent, Calládo.
silently, Calladamente.
Silk, Seda.
a silk weaver, Texedór de seda.

a silk-man, Sedéro.
a silk-worm, Gusano de seda.
a silken garment, Vestido de seda.
silken, or of silk, De seda.
cloth'd in silk, Vestido de seda.
a Sillable, Silaba.
of one syllable, Monosilabo.
of two syllables, Disilabo.
the Sill of a door, Cancél.
Silly, Simple.
sillyly, Simplemente.
silliness, Simplicia.
a silly fellow, Un simplón.
a Silibub, Leche buelta con vino.
to cover with Silver, or to silver over, Ar-
gentár, Plateár, Cubrir con plata.
silvered, or cover'd with silver, Argentádo,
Plateádo, Cubierto de plata.
balls done over with silver, Argentadas, Cu-
biertas de plata.
silver, Plata.
a silverer, Argentador.
a silver mine, Mina de plata.
a silver smith, Platéro.
a Similitude, Similitud.
Symmetry, Simetría, Buena proporción.
a Simmel, bun or cracknel, Buenól, Róscá,
Rosquilla.
Simony, Simonia.
a dealer with Simony, Simoníaco.
Simplicity, Senzillés, Simplicia, Simplicidad,
Inocencia.
a poor simple fellow, Simplezito.
simple, Senzillo, Sencillo, Inocente.
simplicity, Simplicidad, Simplicia, Senzillez,
Inocencia.
simply, Simplemente, Senzillamente, Inocen-
temente.
a Synagogue, Sinagoga.
a Synagogue of the Jews, Aljama.
Since, Dénde, Désde.
since that time, Dénde entonces, Désde
entonces.
not long since, No ha mucho.
Sincerity, Puréza, Sinceridad.
sincere, Sincero.
sincerely, Puramente, Sinceramente, Sana-
mente.
to Sindge, Chamuscár.
sindged with fire, Chamuscado.
a sindge, Chamusquina.
a Sinew, Nervio, Niervo.
a little sinew, Nervézico.
full of sinews, Nervoso.
fulness of sinews, Nervosidad.
that has great sinews, Nervúdo.
to Sing, Cantár.
a singer, Cantór.
a singing man, Cantór.
a singing, or song, Cánto.
a song, Canción, Cánto.
a song well sung together, Cánto acordado.
a song-book, Cancionero.
Singleness, Senzilléz, Simplicidad, Unidad,
Singularidad.
single, Senzillo, Singular, único.
a single man, Soltéro.
a single woman, Soltéra.
singlely, Senzillamente, Unicamente, Sin-
gularmente.
Singreen, Siempreviva.
Singularity, Singularidad.
singular, Singular.
singularly, Singularmente.
Sinister, Siniestro, Aviésso.
sinisterly, Siniestramente, Avieslamente.
to Sink in the water, Hundirse.
to sink to the bottom, Idem.
a sink, Sentina, Sumidéro.
sunk, Hundido.
sinking to the bottom, Hundimiento, Hun-
didúra.
a sink, or gutter, Albañár, Alvañár.
to Sn, Pecár.
sin, Pecado.
sinced, Pecado.
a sinner, Pecador.
sinning, Pecando.
sinful, Gran pecador, Llén de pecados,
Pecaminoso.
a Sinew, Nervio, Niervo.

a little sinew, Nervézico.
full of sinews, Nervoso.
fulness of sinews, Nervosidad.
that has great sinews, Nervúdo.
to Sip, Sorbér.
a sip, Sorbo.
sipp'd, Sorbido.
a sipper, Sorbedór.
a sipping, Sorbimiento.
Sir, Señor.
a Sire, Padre.
a Sirene, Seréna.
a Siringe, Xeringa.
a Sirrup, Xarave, Xarope, Lamedór.
sirrups of olives, Alpechin de azéyte.
Sifers, Tijeras, Tixerás.
a Sister, Ermána, Hermána.
sister-like, Ermanáble.
sisterhood, Ermandad.
to Sit, Sentár.
to sit on the ground, Arrellanár.
to sit on ones hams, Sentarse en clucillas.
a sitting, Sentamiento.
sitten on the ground, Arrellanado.
a Sieth, Guadana.
to Situate, Situar.
situation, Sitio, Situación.
situated, Situado.
situate, Idem.
a Sieve or searse, Çaranda, Cedáço, Criba.
a sieve of hair to range course meal, Çedáço.
a sieve-maker, Çedáçero.
Six, Séiz.
the sixth, Séxto.
Sixteen, Diez y seiz.
Sixty, Seßenta.
Size, Tamaño.
S K
a Skaffold, Andámio, Cadaháño, Tablado.
a Skain of thread, Madéxa.
a little skain, Madexita.
a Skallion, Escalóna.
a Skale, vide Scale.
to Skare away, Amedrentár, Atemorizar,
Espantár.
skaring, or frightening, Espantájo, Espánto,
Temór.
skared, Amedrentádo, Atemorizádo, E-
spantádo.
one that skares, Espantador, Amedrenta-
dor, Atemorizador.
a Skar, Cicatriz.
a Skatch, or crutch, Muléta.
a Skellet, Cazo.
a Skeleton, Esqueléto.
the Sky, Firmamento, Cielo.
sky colour, Azúl celéste.
a Skiff, or small boat, Bagét, Bajét, or Va-
jél, Esquífe.
Skill, Arte, Maña, Destreza.
to be skillful, Sér diéstro.
skillful, Diéstro.
skillfully, Diestramente.
a Skillet, or posnet, Caçolilla, Calderéta,
Caço.
to Skim, Espumar.
skim'd, Espumado.
a skimmer, Espumadera.
skum, Espuma.
the Skin, Pellejo.
the skin over the skull, Panículo.
a place where skins are sold, Pellejería.
to wax hard skinned, Callecér.
to skin, or flea, Despellejár.
skinn'd, or flead, Despellejado.
skinny, Pellejudo.
hard skin, Calle.
a skin, Pellejo.
the skin or pill of a thing, Holléjo.
hard skinned, Callólo.
to do over with skin, Empellejár.
done over with skin, Empellejado.
a skinner, Pellejero, Pellizéro.
Skinking of drink, Escancia.
to skink or fill drunk, Escanciar.
a skinker, Escanciadór.
to Skip, or leap for joy, or the like, Saltár
de alegría.
a skip, Salto.
a skipper, Saltador.
skipping, Saltando. to Skirmish,

to Skirmish, Escaramuçar.
 a Skirmish, Escaramuça, Refriega.
 Skirmishing, Escaramuçando.
 Skirted-roots, Chirivías.
 the Skirts of a Coat, Faldaméntas, Haldas, Faldas.
 to draw the Skirts of the Cloaths after him, Haldear, Arrastrar la ropa.
 one that wears Cloaths with long skirts, Haldúdo, or Faldúdo.
 to be Skittish as Beasts are, Sér Coxquillólo.
 Skittish, Coxquillólo.
 to Skive, Revanar.
 a Skof or Taunt, Baldón, Mofa.
 to Skof, Baldonar, Motar.
 a Skoffer, Baldonador, Mofador.
 Skoffed at, Baldonado, Moadó.
 to Skold, vide scold.
 a Skonce, vid Sconce.
 a Skonce, a fortify'd Place, Fuerte, Fuer-tezillo.
 to Skreak, Gritar, Vozear.
 a Skreen, Biombo.
 a Skrew, Tornillo.
 a skrew or Vice, Clavilla.
 a Skritchowl, Búho, Lechuza.
 a Skull, Calavera.
 Skum, Espuma.

S L

Slabber, Báva, or Bába.
 to Slabber, Babear.
 Slabber'd, Babeado.
 a Slabberer, Babeador.
 a Slaberring, Babeadura.
 Slabbery, Baboso.
 Slabby, Húmedo.
 Slabbiness of a way after the Frost is thawed, Bavaza, Humedad.
 to Slack, or loosen, Afloxar.
 Slack, Flóxo.
 Slack'd, Afloxado.
 Slacking, Afloxando.
 Slackness, Afloxadura, Floxura.
 one that Slackens, Afloxador.
 Slackly, Floxaménte.
 to Slay, or Kill, Matar.
 Slain, Muerto.
 a Slayer, Matador.
 a Slaying, Matança.
 to Slack or Quench, Apagar.
 a Slander, Calúmnia.
 to Slander, Calumniar.
 slander'd, Calumniado.
 a Slanderer, Calumniador.
 a Slatter, Tejadór, Techador.
 a Slate, Pizarra.
 to Slaver, Bavear.
 Slaving much, Bavoso.
 Slaver or spittle, Bava, vid. Slabber.
 a Slave, Esclavo.
 Slavery, Esclavitud, Servidumbre.
 slavishly, Como esclavo, Servilmente.
 a Slaughter, Matança, Eltrágo.
 a Slaughter-house, Matadero.
 Slander, Calúmnia.
 Slandorous, Calumnióso.
 a Smiths S'edge, Macho de herrero.
 to Sleepe, Dormir.
 a Sleeper, Dormilón.
 Sleep, Sueño.
 Slept, Dormido.
 Sleepy, Somolento.
 a Sleeping place, Dormitorio.
 Sleeping, Dormiendo.
 a Sleeve, Manga.
 hanging Sleeves, such as Children wear, Mangas perdidas.
 Sleeved, Con mangas.
 long Sleeved, Con mangas largas.
 Sleeveless, Sin mangas.
 a Sleight, shift, or Deceit, Artimaña.
 to grow Slender, Adelgazar.
 to make Slender or small, Adelgazar.
 making Slender or small, Adelgazamiento.
 Slender, Delgado, Sutil.
 made slender, Adelgazado.
 slenderness, Delgades, Sutiléza.

Slenderly, Delgadamente, Sutilmente.
 very Slenderly, Muy delgadamente.
 a Slice, Revanada.
 to Slice, Revanar.
 slic'd, Revanado.
 a slicer, Revanador.
 to Slide, Deslizár.
 sliding, Deslizando.
 a She or wily Person, Cauteloso.
 slyly, Cautelosamente.
 Sime, Cieno.
 Slimy, Cienagoso, Cienoso.
 to Sling, or cast out of a sling, Tirar con honda, Hondear.
 a sling, Honda.
 to slip or slide, Resbalar, or Resvalar.
 to Slip away, Descabullirse, Escabullir, Escurrir la b'ola, Escaparse.
 to draw in a Slip, Atraillár.
 drawn in a slip or leash, Atraillado.
 slipp'd, or sided, Resvalado, Deslizado.
 slipp'd away, Escabullido.
 slipping, or sliding, Deslizadura, Resvaladura.
 slipping away, Escabullidura.
 a slip for a Dog, Traylla.
 a slip on the ground, Resvalón.
 a Slip or young Branch, Tallo.
 a Slipper, Pantúfio, Chinela.
 a pair of Slippers, un pár de Pantúfios, or Chinelas.
 that wears Slippers, Calçado de Chinelas, or Pantúfios.
 to make Slippery, Hazer lizo, or Desbaloso, or Resvaladizo.
 a Slippery Place, Deslizadero, Resbaladero, Resvaladero.
 slipperiness, Deslizadura.
 slippery, Lúbrico, Resbaloso.
 to Slic, or cleave, Hender, Abrir.
 slit, Hendidó.
 a slit, Hendidura, Rasgón.
 a slitter, Hendedór.
 Slob, Peréza, Acidia.
 a Sloven, Súzio.
 slovenly apparelled, Súzio en el vestido, Defalñado.
 to be Slow, Sér Léndo.
 slow or slack, Lénto, Léndo.
 slowness or slackness, Peréza, Floxedad, Lerdéza.
 slowly, Floxaménte, Lerdaménte.
 to be slothful, Emperezar, Haronear, Ser perezoso.
 to shake off Slob, Dezemperezar.
 shaking off slob, Desemperezar.
 slouth, Acidia, Haronia, Peréza.
 slouthful, Flóxo, Perezoso.
 slouthfully, Floxaménte, Perezosamente.
 slouthfulness, Floxedad, Peréza.
 to slope, Anesgar, Cortar al través.
 Slop'd, Cortado al través.
 a slouch, Un Desmaçalado.
 a slough, Pantano.
 to Slubber, Enfuziar.
 a Sluce to let Water in, Esclufa.
 a Sluggard, Dormilón, Perezoso.
 sluggish, Adormido, Perezoso.
 sluggishly, Perezosamente.
 sluggishness, Peréza.
 to Slumber, Dormitar.
 slumbering, Dormitando.
 to be Sluttish, Sér Súzia.
 sluttish, Súzia.
 sluttishly, Suziaménte.
 to beray sluttishly, Enfuziar.
 sluttishness, Suziedad, Defalño, Porqueria.

S M

to make Small, or little, Adelgazar, Achicar, Minorar.
 made small, Achicado.
 making small, Archicaduria.
 small, Chico, Pequeño.
 smallness, Pequeñez.
 to break small, Desmenuzar.
 small things, Menudézas.
 smally, Menudamente.
 Smart, or sharp, Agúdo.
 to Smart, Escoger.

smarting, Escocimiento.
 to smear, Untar, Embarrar.
 smear'd, Untado, Embarrado.
 a smearer, Untador, Embarrador.
 to Smell, Oler.
 the sense of smelling, Olfato.
 smelling, Oliendo.
 a smell, Olór.
 smelt, Olido.
 a smeller, Oledór.
 to Smile, Sonreír.
 a smile, Sonriso.
 smiling, Sonriyendo.
 to Smite, to strike.
 a Smith, Herrero.
 Smiths work, Herreria.
 a gold smith, Platéro.
 a silver smith, Platéro.
 a black smith, Herrero.
 a lock'smith, Cerrajero.
 a smith, or farrier, Herrador, Albéytar.
 to Smoak, Ahumar, Humear.
 smoak, Húmo, Humaréda.
 smoaked, Ahumado.
 smoakings, Ahumadas.
 smoaky, Ahumado, Humoso.
 a Funnel for smoak, Huméro.
 a Smock, Camisa de mugér.
 smooch, Lizo, Llano.
 to Smooch, Acepillar, Alizar.
 smoothed, Acepillado, Alizado.
 a smoothing, Alifadura, Acepilladura.
 smoothness, Lizura, Llanéza.
 smoothly, Lizaménte, Llanaménte.
 to Smother, Ahogar, Suffocar.
 smother'd Ahogado.
 smothering, Ahogamiento, Suffocamiento.
 smug, Polido, or Pulido.
 to smug, Pulir.
 smutch, Tizne.

S N

a Snaffle, Bocado de freno.
 a Snarl, Caracol.
 a young Snail, Caracozillo.
 the shell of a Snail, Carcoléjo.
 a Snake Culébra.
 a little snake, Culebrilla.
 snake weed, Culebrina yerba.
 to snap the Fingers, Cattañetear.
 to take in a Snare, Enlazar.
 to deliver from a Snare, Desenhetrar, Desenlazar.
 a Snare, Arañuelo, Lázo.
 Snares to catch Birds in, Armadijos.
 snared, Enlazado.
 snaring, Enlazadura.
 to Snarle, like a Dog, Ganir, Gruñir, Rezonglar.
 snarling, Gruñendo, Rezonglando.
 to Snatch, Arrebatar.
 snatched, Arrebatado.
 a Snatcher, Arrebatador.
 snatching, Arrebatadura.
 snatchingly, Arrebatadamente.
 to sneake, Encogerse.
 sneaking, Encogido.
 to Sneefe, Estornudar.
 sneefing, Estornudo.
 to Sniffle, Oliscar.
 to snip, Cortar, Cercenar.
 Snivel, Moquitas.
 to snivel, Moquear.
 to Snore, Roncar.
 a snorer, Roncador.
 to Snore, Roncar.
 Snort, Moco.
 snorty, Mocosó.
 to Snow, Nevár.
 snow, Nieve.
 a Drift of snow, Nevada.
 snowy, Nevado.
 the Snow of a ship, Espolón.
 a snout, Hocico.
 snouted like a Hog, Hociúdo.
 Snuff, Tabaco en polvo.
 to take snuff, Tomar tabaco.
 to take snuff, or take pet, Subirse el húmo a las narices.

to Snuff a Candle, Espavillár, Despavilár.
the Snuff of a Candle, Pávilo.
Snuffers for a Candle, Despaviladeras, or
Tigéras de despavilár.
one that snuffles in the Nose, Gangólo.

S O.

So, Así.
So, so, Así, así, Medianamente.
So be it, Así sea, Amen.
a Soal Fish, Lenguado.
to soak, Empapar.
soak'd, Empapado.
Soap, Xabón.
to do with soap, Enxabonar.
done with soap, Enxabonado.
to Sob, Sollojar.
a sob, Sollójo.
Soberness, or sobriety, Modestia.
sober, Modesto, Repósito.
soberly, Modestamente, Sobriamente, Re-
posadamente.
Society, or Fellowship, Conversación, Ami-
tad, Compañía.
sociable, Conversable.
sociably, Amigablemente.
a Sock, Escarpín.
a swollen sock, Peal.
a Socket of a Candlestick, Cañon de can-
delero.
Sodden, Cozido.
a Sod of Earth, Terrón.
Sodomy, Sodomía.
a Sodomite, Somético.
to make Soft, Ablandar, Reblandecer.
softness, Blandura.
softened, Ablandado.
soft, Blando.
a softer, Ablandador.
softly or gently, Blandamente.
to Soil, or Defile, Ensuziar, Emporear.
soiled, Ensuziado, Emporcado.
soil or Land, Tierra.
Solace, Solaz, Holgura, Deléyte.
to solace, Solazar, Holgar.
Sold, vide sell.
to solder, Soldar.
solder'd, Soldado.
Soldier, Soldado.
Sole or only, Sólo.
solely, Salamente.
the sole of the Foot, Planta de pie.
the sole of a shoe, Suéla de zapato.
a Solecism, Solecismo.
to Solemnize, Celebrar, Solenizar.
Solemniz'd, Celebrado, Solenizado.
Solemnity, Celebridad, Solenidad.
Solemn, Soléne.
Solemnly, Solenemente.
to Solicite, Solicitar.
solicited, Solicitado.
a Solicitor of Law-Matters, Pleytista, Pro-
curador.
a Soliciting, Solicitación.
Solicitous, Solicito.
Solicitously, Solicitamente.
Solicitude, Solicitud.
Solid, Sólido Mazizo.
Solidly, Solidamente.
Solidity, Solidéz.
Solitariness, Soledad.
Solitary, Solitario.
Solitarily, Solitariamente.
a Sollar, or Upper-loft, Entrefueño.
Some, Algúno, Algún.
some Body, Algúno, Alguien.
something, Algo.
some time, Algúna vez.
some what, Algúna cosa.
some whither, En algúna parte, en algún
cabo.
the Post in a House that the Carpenters
call the Somner, Cán sobre que cargan
vigas.
a Song, Cantar.
a Pastoral Song, Villancico.
a Love Song, Cantar amoroso.
a Lewd Song, Cantar deshonesto.
a Son, Hijo.
a Son-in-Law, Antenado, Andado, Yerno

a Son-in-Law of a Wife or Husband that
is Dead, Andado.
a Son-in-Law, or Daughters Husband,
Yerno.
a Sonnet, Soneto.
Soon, Pronto.
Soot of a Chimney, Hollín.
to besmut with Soot, Hollínar, Tizar,
Tiznar.
besmutting with Soot, Hollinamiento,
Tiznadura.
Sooty, Holliniento, Tiznado.
Soothing, Lisónja.
to sooth or flatter, Lisongear.
a Soother, Lisongero.
a Soothsayer, Adevino.
to soothsay, Adevinar.
soothsaying, Adevinanga.
Sope, Xabón.
sweet Sope, Xabón oloroso.
to sope, Xabonar.
soped, Xabonado.
a Sope-maker, Xabonero:
to Sop, Sopar.
a Sop, Galpacho, Sopa.
Sops made of Honey, Bread and Water,
Migas.
a Sophister, Sofista.
to Sophistate, Sofisticar.
Sophisticated, Sofisticado.
Sophistry, Sofistería.
Soporiferous, Soporífero.
Sorcery, Hechizería, Encantamiento, Bru-
xería.
a Sorcerer, Hechizero, Encantador, Brúxo.
a Sorceress, Encantadora, Hechizera,
Bruxa.
Sordid, Súzio, Vil, miserable.
Sordidly, Suziamente, Vilmemente, Miserable-
mente.
Sordidness, Suziedad, Viléza, miséria.
Sore, Doloroso, Dolorido.
a Sore, Llaga.
sore or Cruel, Cruel.
to be Sorry, or sorrowful, Estar triste, Estar,
Pesaroso, Tener pesar.
Sorrowfully, Pesarosamente.
Sorrow, Angustia, Pesar, Pesadumbre, Con-
goxa, Dolor, Duelo, Entristecimiento,
Tristeza.
Sorrowfully, Dolorosamente, Pesarosa-
mente.
Sorrowful, Apesado, Angustioso, Dolo-
roso, Pesaroso, Triste, Afogado.
to make Sorrowful, Apesarar, Angustiar,
Afligir.
a Sorrowing, Entristecimiento.
made sorrowful, Angustiado, Entristecido,
Apesarado, Afogado.
Sorrel, an Herb so called, Agrúles, Aze-
déra, Romaza, Acucia.
a Sorrel-Horse, Cavallo Alazan.
in such Sort, De tal manera.
a sort or kind, Suerte, Género.
to Sort, Apartar, Escoger.
Sorted, Apartado, Escogido.
Southernwood, Lombriguera.
a Sor, Albardón, Tonto, Borracho.
Sottishly, Tontamente, Borracha-
mente.
Sottishness, Tontería, Borrachería.
Sovereignty, Soberanía.
Sovereignly, Soberanamente.
Sovereign, Soberano.
Soght, vide to seek.
to Solder, Soldar.
Solder, Sisa.
Soldred, Soldado.
a Solderer, Soldador.
a Soldering, Soldadura.
to be a Soldier, Sér Soldado, Servir al
Réy.
to serve as a Soldier, idem.
a Soldier, Soldado.
a young Soldier, Visón.
an old Soldier, Soldado viejo.
a Soldiers Coat, Sayo de soldado.
Soldierlike, como Soldado.
the Soul, A'lma, A'nima.

the Souls of the Dead, Las ánimas de los
difuntos.
to Sound on any Instrument, Tañer qual-
quier Instrumento, or Tocar.
to sound a Trumpet, Tocar trompeta.
to make a Sound, Sonar.
to sound as Bells, Repicar.
a sound or Noise, Són, Sonido, Ruído.
a sounding Plummer, or Plummer, Son-
daléfa.
Sounding hollow, Sonoro.
to make sound and whole, Sanar or Curar.
Soundness, Enteréza.
Sound, Enéro, Macico, Sano.
made sound and whole, Sanado.
Soundy, Sanamente.
to Soup, or suck up, Embever.
to Soup, sup, or sip, Sorber.
Soup't, sup'd, or sipp'd, Sorbido.
Souped, or suck'd up, Embevído.
to Souple, Ablandar.
to be Sour, Estar ágrío, or azédo.
somewhat Sour, Agrillo.
to make Sour, Agriar, Hazer A'grío.
to grow Sour, Azedarfe.
Sourness, Agrura, Hazedía.
Sourly, Acriamente.
Sour, Azédo, A'grío.
the South, Medio día, Sur.
the South-Wind, Viento Sur.
The South-West-Wind, Vendabal.
Southern, Meridional.
to Southsay, or tell a thing by Divination,
Adevinar. Pronosticar.
a Southsayer, Adevino.
Southsaying, Adevinando, Pronosti-
cando.
a Sow, Puérca.
a Sow great with Pig, Puérca preñada.
a Sow-pig, Cochina.
a Sowes going to Boar, Bertiondez.
to Sow seeds, Sembrar, Sementar.
Sowed, Sembrado, Sementado.
a Sower, Sembrador.
Sowing season, Sementera.
Sowing, Sembradura.
Sown, Sembrado.
to Sow with a Needle, Coser.
Sowed, Cosido.
Sowing, Cosidura.
to Sowen, Amortecer, Cortarse, or Def-
mayarse, Desfallecer, Pasmarse.
sow'd, Amortecido, Desfallecido, Def-
mayado.
in a sown, Desfallecido, Pasmado.
he fell in a sown, Pasmose, Desmayose.
sowing, Amortecimiento, Pasma, Def-
mayo.
to sowse, Escabechar.
sow's'd, Escabechado.
sowse, Escabèche.
sowsing, Escabechadura.
a Sowse seller, Tripéro, Mondonguero, Es-
cabechero.
Sourte, or Sorte, Tíne.
a Sourter, or Cabler, Remendon.
a Sourthistle, Aljonjera.

S P.

a Space, Espacio, Rato, Trécho.
of space, De espacio.
spacious, Espacioso.
a Spade or shovel, Açéda, Açadón
the Haft or Handle of a spade, Atíl.
a little spade, Açadoncillo.
he that labours with a spade, Açado-
nero.
to Spare, Cipar.
a water Spaniel, Péro de água.
a land Spaniel, Ferdiguero, Péro de voia-
teria.
a Spangle, Pinjante, Lantejuéla de oro, o
de plata.
a Spaniard, Español.
made Spanish, Españolado.
Spanish Leather, Cordovan.
Spanish, Romance, Español.
the Span from the Thumbs end to the
Fore-fingers end stretched out, Xéme.

the Span from the Thumbs end to the Little Fingers end stretched out, Pálmico.
 a Spare ring, Cosa de resguardo.
 Spare of Fish, Flaco.
 Spare time, Tiempo de ocupado.
 Spat'd, Ahorrado.
 to Spare or save as in Expences, Ahorrar.
 Sparing, Ahorro.
 very Sparing, Escasso.
 Sparingly, Escasamente.
 to Sparkle, Centellear.
 a Sparkle, or Spark, Centella.
 the Sparkling of the Eyes, La Lumbre de los ojos, el Centellear de los ojos.
 a Spar, or Bar of Wood, Palo, leño, Atravessano, Tranca.
 a Sparrow, Gorrión, Pardal.
 a young Sparrow, Gorriónillo, Gorrión nuevo.
 a Spatula, or Instrument that Surgeons use, in spreading their Salves, Paletilla de Boticario, Espátula.
 to Spawn as Fishes, Desovar.
 the Spawn of Fish, Huevos de pescado, Overa de pescado.
 to Speak, D-zir, Hablar.
 to Speak well, Hablar bien.
 to Speak Mysticaly, Hablar por cifras, or por Metáforas.
 to Speak ill or to slander, Murmurar, Hablar mal.
 to Speak plain and intelligibly, Hablar claro y dentro.
 a Speaker, Hablador.
 Speaking by contraries, Hablar una cosa por otra Ironía.
 Speaking, Hablando.
 a Speech, Dicho, Dicción, Dición, Hábla, Oración, Plática.
 Spoken, Hablado, Dicho.
 well Spoken, Bien hablado.
 Special or particular, Especial, Particular, Peculiar.
 Specialy, Particularmente.
 to Specify, Especificar.
 Specified, Especificado.
 Specious, Vistoso.
 Speciously, Vistosamente.
 a Speck or Pimple, Lunar, Grano.
 a Spectacle, Espectaculo.
 a pair of Spectacles, Antojos, Espejuelos.
 Speculation, Especulación.
 Speculative, Especulativo.
 Speculatively, Especulativamente.
 Speculative Knowledge, Teórica.
 Speech, Hábla.
 to make Speed, Acelerar, Aquezar, Dar prisa.
 God Speed you, Dios sea con vos.
 Speed, Aquezamiento, Prisa.
 a making Speed, Aceleración.
 Speedy, Apremiado.
 Speedily, Aquezadamente, Apremiadamente.
 to Spell, Deletrear.
 Spelt, Deletreado.
 a Spell, or Charm, Encanto.
 a Spence, Despenda.
 to Spend, Despendér, Espondér, Gastar.
 to Spend unthrifly, Desperdicar.
 Spending unthrifly, Desperdicio.
 Spent unthrifly, Desperdicado, Espondido.
 a Spender, Despendedor, Gastador, Desperdicador.
 Spending, Gastando.
 Spent, Despendido, Gastado.
 Sperm, Espermia, to sperm.
 Sperage an Herb, Espermio.
 to Spit, or spit, Escupir.
 to Spew or vomit, Revellar, Vomitar.
 Spew'd, Revellado, Vomitado.
 Spem, Vómito.
 a Spewer, Vomitador.
 a Sphere, Esfera.
 Spherical, Esférico.
 a Sphinx, Esfinge.
 Spice, Especia.
 Spicer, Especiero.
 Spicing, Especiando.
 a Spider, Araña.
 an House full of Spiders, Arañenta casa.
 a little Spider, Arañeta.
 to Spie or lie in wait for, Espiar, Otear, Acechar.
 Spy'd, Espiado.
 a Spie or scout, Espia, Espión.
 Spying place, Otero.
 Spight, Malicia.
 a Spigo, Tornillo, Mácho.
 to Spill as any Liquid thing, Vertér, Derramar.
 Spilt, or shed, Derramado, Vertido.
 to Spill, spoil, or mar, Echár a perder, Giliar.
 Spilled or marr'd, Gastado, Echado a perder.
 Spinage, Espinaca.
 a Spindle, Húso.
 to Spin, Hilar.
 a Spinner, Hiladéra, Hilandéra.
 Spinning, Hilando.
 a Spire or steeple, Chapitel.
 a Spirit, Espiritu.
 the Spirit of a Man, A'nima, Espiritu, Alma.
 an evil Spirit, Demónio, Diablo.
 Spiritual, Espiritual.
 Spiritually, Espiritualmente.
 Spite or Ill Will, Ordio, Malquerencia, Malevolencia.
 in Spire of, a Pesar de.
 Spiteful, Odioso, Malévolo.
 Spitefully, Con odio, con malevolencia, Maliciosamente.
 a Spit, or Broach, Asador, Asadero.
 to Spit meat, Espetar.
 to Spit, Escupir, Escupir.
 Spittle or spaver, Bava or Bavaza, Escopetina, Saliva, Escupinajo.
 a Spittle or sick House, Enfermería, Ospital, Hospital.
 a Spitting, Escupidura.
 a Spitter, Escupidor.
 to Splay, Capar.
 Splay'd, Capado.
 Splayfooted, Patituerto.
 a Spleen, or Mile, Bazo, or Bazo.
 Spleenatick, Hipocondriaco.
 Spleenatickly, Hipocondriacamente.
 Splendor, Esplendor.
 a Splint in a Horses Leg, Espinilla.
 a Splinter, Astilla.
 to Split, Hendér.
 Split, Hendido.
 a Splitter, Hendedor.
 to Spoil, waste or destroy, Gastar, Estragar, Echár a perder.
 Spoil'd, Gastado, Estragado.
 a Spoiler, Estragador.
 a Spoke of a Wheel, Rayo de rueda.
 Spoke, or spoken, Dicho.
 a Spoon, Cuchara.
 a Spoonful, Cucharada.
 to Spout, Hilar, Regozijar.
 Sport, Holganza, Solaz, Passatiempo.
 Sporting, Holgando.
 to Spot, Macular, Manchár, Mancillar, Manzillar.
 a Spot, Mácula, Mancha, Manzilla, Pinta, Peca.
 a little Spot, Manchita.
 Spotted, Maculado, Manchado.
 full of Spots, Manzillado, Pecoso.
 Spotting, Manchando.
 to Spout, Casar, Desposar.
 a Spouse, Esposo, Velado.
 a Spouse or Wife, Esposa.
 a Spout, Aquaticho, fuente, Xeringa, Caño, Canal.
 to Spout, Arrojar agua.
 to Spread, Espazir.
 Spread, Espazido.
 Spreading, Espaciendo.
 a Sprig, Rama.
 Sprightly, Vivo.
 to Spring, or sprout, Nacer, Nacer, Brotar, Echár Ramas.

a Spicer, Especiero.
 Spices, Especies.
 Spicing, Especiando.
 a Spider, Araña.
 an House full of Spiders, Arañenta casa.
 a little Spider, Arañeta.
 to Spie or lie in wait for, Espiar, Otear, Acechar.
 Spy'd, Espiado.
 a Spie or scout, Espia, Espión.
 Spying place, Otero.
 Spight, Malicia.
 a Spigo, Tornillo, Mácho.
 to Spill as any Liquid thing, Vertér, Derramar.
 Spilt, or shed, Derramado, Vertido.
 to Spill, spoil, or mar, Echár a perder, Giliar.
 Spilled or marr'd, Gastado, Echado a perder.
 Spinage, Espinaca.
 a Spindle, Húso.
 to Spin, Hilar.
 a Spinner, Hiladéra, Hilandéra.
 Spinning, Hilando.
 a Spire or steeple, Chapitel.
 a Spirit, Espiritu.
 the Spirit of a Man, A'nima, Espiritu, Alma.
 an evil Spirit, Demónio, Diablo.
 Spiritual, Espiritual.
 Spiritually, Espiritualmente.
 Spite or Ill Will, Ordio, Malquerencia, Malevolencia.
 in Spire of, a Pesar de.
 Spiteful, Odioso, Malévolo.
 Spitefully, Con odio, con malevolencia, Maliciosamente.
 a Spit, or Broach, Asador, Asadero.
 to Spit meat, Espetar.
 to Spit, Escupir, Escupir.
 Spittle or spaver, Bava or Bavaza, Escopetina, Saliva, Escupinajo.
 a Spittle or sick House, Enfermería, Ospital, Hospital.
 a Spitting, Escupidura.
 a Spitter, Escupidor.
 to Splay, Capar.
 Splay'd, Capado.
 Splayfooted, Patituerto.
 a Spleen, or Mile, Bazo, or Bazo.
 Spleenatick, Hipocondriaco.
 Spleenatickly, Hipocondriacamente.
 Splendor, Esplendor.
 a Splint in a Horses Leg, Espinilla.
 a Splinter, Astilla.
 to Split, Hendér.
 Split, Hendido.
 a Splitter, Hendedor.
 to Spoil, waste or destroy, Gastar, Estragar, Echár a perder.
 Spoil'd, Gastado, Estragado.
 a Spoiler, Estragador.
 a Spoke of a Wheel, Rayo de rueda.
 Spoke, or spoken, Dicho.
 a Spoon, Cuchara.
 a Spoonful, Cucharada.
 to Spout, Hilar, Regozijar.
 Sport, Holganza, Solaz, Passatiempo.
 Sporting, Holgando.
 to Spot, Macular, Manchár, Mancillar, Manzillar.
 a Spot, Mácula, Mancha, Manzilla, Pinta, Peca.
 a little Spot, Manchita.
 Spotted, Maculado, Manchado.
 full of Spots, Manzillado, Pecoso.
 Spotting, Manchando.
 to Spout, Casar, Desposar.
 a Spouse, Esposo, Velado.
 a Spouse or Wife, Esposa.
 a Spout, Aquaticho, fuente, Xeringa, Caño, Canal.
 to Spout, Arrojar agua.
 to Spread, Espazir.
 Spread, Espazido.
 Spreading, Espaciendo.
 a Sprig, Rama.
 Sprightly, Vivo.
 to Spring, or sprout, Nacer, Nacer, Brotar, Echár Ramas.

a Spring, Fuente.
 Sprung up, Nacido, Nacido, Brotado.
 to Spring as Water does, Emanar, Bullir, Salir, Brotar.
 a little Spring, Fuentezica, Fuentezuéla, Fuentezilla.
 a Place full of Springs, Fontanal.
 the Spring-tide, Aguas vivas.
 a Spring or Fountain, Manancial.
 the Spring of the Day, A'lva.
 to Sprinkle, Rociar.
 a Sprinkler, or an Instrument to sprinkle withal, Rociadero, Hópo.
 Sprinkled, Rociado.
 to sprout, Brotar.
 Spruce, Gentil.
 Sprucely, Gentilmente.
 Spruceness, Gentileza.
 to Spue, vid. Spew.
 to Spunge, Esponjar.
 a Spunge, Esponja.
 Spung'd, Esponjado.
 Spungy or full of Holes, Esponjoso.
 Spun, Hilado.
 to Spurn, Acocear, Apuntillar, Tirar Cocea, Dar puntapiés.
 Spurn'd, Acoceado, Cocado.
 a Spurner, Acoceador, Coadador, Apuntillador.
 Spurning, Acoceamiento, Puntapie, Puntillazo.
 to Spur on, Instimular, Incitar.
 to Spur, Espolear.
 Spur'd, Espoleado.
 a Spur, Espuela.
 a Spurgal, or stroke with a spur, Golpe de espuela, Espolada.
 Spurring, Espoleando.
 a Spurrer, Espoleador.
 Spurr'd on, Instimulado, Incitado.
 a Cocks Spur, Espolón.
 a Spurrier, El que haze espuelas, Espolero.
 to Spurt out, Escupir.
 to Spy, vid. Spie.
 a Squabble, Pendencia.
 a Squadron, Esquadrón.
 to Squander, Derramar, Malbaratar.
 Squander'd, Derramado, Malbaratado.
 a Squanderer, Derramador, Malbaratador.
 to Square, Dolar.
 Squared out, Dolado.
 a Squarer out, Dolador.
 to make Square, Quadrar.
 to Square or plain stones, Escodar.
 a Tool to Square stones with, Escoda.
 a Carpenters Square, Esquadra.
 Square, Quadrángular.
 Squared, Cuadrado.
 a Square Court, Pátio.
 to Squat or cast against the Ground, Tirar algo al suelo, Pachucar.
 to Squat as a Hare doth in Hunting, Agachar, Agachapar.
 one that Squats so, Agachapador, Agachador.
 Squatted, Agachado, Agachado.
 a Squeak, Grito, Chillido.
 to Squeak, Gritar, Chillar.
 to be Squeamish, Esquivar.
 Squeamish, Esquivo.
 Squeamishly, Esquivamente.
 Squeamishness, Esquivéz.
 to Squeeze, Estruxar.
 a Squeeze, Estrujón.
 Squeez'd, Estrujado.
 Squibs, Coetes, Cohetes.
 the Squincy, or squinancy, Esquinancia, or Esquilencia, Adivas.
 he that looks a Squint, Bisco, Vísco, Túrno.
 a Square, vide Esquire.
 an Apple Squire, Mandil.
 a Squirrel, Hárda, Hardilla.
 the Squirt, Fluxe and Laske, Cámaras.
 a Squirt, Xeringa.
 to Squirt, Xeringear.

S T.

to *Stab*, Dár Puñaladas.
Stabb'd, Herido de puñalada.
a Stable, Establo, Cavallería.
Stable or stedfast, Firme, Estable.
Stability, Firmemente, Establemente.
Stability, Firméza, Estabilidad.
to Stablish, Afirmar, Establecer, Assegurar.
a Stack of Hay, Montón de heno.
a Stack of Wood, Hazienda de leña.
a Staf, Báculo, or Bordón, Baculillo, Bastoncillo.
a leading Staff for a Captain, Gineta.
a great leading Staff, Gineton.
a walking Staf, Bordón, Báculo.
a pike Staf, Chuzgo.
a Stage, Tablado, Teatro.
a Stag, Ciervo.
to Stagger, Bacilar, or Bambalear, Vacilar, Dár traspiés. (Bacilando).
Staggering, Bambaleando, Bambaleando.
to Stay, stop, or hold back, Eltorvar, Tardar, Detener.
a Stay, Paradilla.
a Staying Place, Parada, Paradero.
Stay'd, Parado, quedado, eltorvado, detenido.
Staying at a Place, Estada, Quedada, Tardanza, Detención.
to Stain, Manchar.
a Stain, Mancha.
Stain'd, Manchado.
a Stainer, Manchador.
Staining, Manchando.
a Stair, or step, Escalón.
a pair of Stairs, Escalera.
a pair of winding Stairs, Caracol.
to Stake or lay a wager, Apostar.
a Stake or wager, Apuesta.
a Stake, Hincón, Pálo.
a Stake to shoot at, Poste.
to grow Stale, Envejecer, Enranciar.
Stale or old, Añejo, Rancio.
a Stalking Horse, Boezuelo. (Pálo).
a Stalk of anything, Tallo, Bástago, Fúlte.
a Stall, Establo.
an oxen Stall, Establo de buéyes.
a trade mans Stall, Tablero de tienda.
Tiendilla, Cobachuela.
the head Stall of a Bridle for an Horse, Cabestro, Xaquima.
a Stallion, Cavallo Garañón.
to Stammer or stutter, Tartamudár, or Tartamudear, or Tartajear.
a Stammerer, Tartamudo, Tartajoso.
Stammering, Tartamudeando.
Stammeringly, Como Tartamudo, Tartajosamente.
to Stamp, or beat small, Machucár, Machar, Desmenuzar.
to Stamp with a pestle, Majar.
to Stamp or print, Estampar.
to Stamp or coin, Acunár la moneda.
to Stamp with the feet, Patear.
a Stamp or print, Estampa de la empreña.
Stamp'd, Estampado, Majado.
Stamp'd in a Mortar, Machucado, Machado, Molido.
a Stamper or Printer, Impresor.
a Stamper in a Mortar, Machucador, Machador, Moledor.
Stamping, Majadura, Machadura, Moledura.
to Stanch, Detener la sangre, Cogér la sangre, Retenir la sangre.
Stanch'd, Detenido.
a Standard, Estandarte, Vandera, Pendón.
to Stand, Estar, or Estar en pie.
to Stand bristling like a hair, Erizarse, Ponérse tiello. (Erizado).
Standing up of the hair, Erizamiento, Erizar.
to Stand as a Pool of Water does, Estancar, Hacer alicanto.
to make a Stand as Soldiers do, Hacer alto, Parar, Detenerse.
a Standing Place, Estancia, Paradero.
a Standing table, Butaca, Mesa.
Standing up, En pie, Erguido, Tendido.
Standing on a steep hill side, or on a rock, Abarrancado.
a ale or beer Stand, Tínapa.
Standing water, Represada agua, Estánque.
Standing over, Sobrestante.
to Stand to it, Tenerse en buenas.

a Staple or Market, Mercado, Pecaia.
an iron Staple, Armella.
Starbord, Eltriborda.
to Starch, Almidonar.
Starch, Almidón.
Starch'd, Almidonado.
to grow Stark, or stiff with cold, Envarar, Aterir, Enteslar.
Stark, Envarado, Aterido, Tendido.
Starkness, Envaramiento, Aterimiento, Tiesura.
to Stare, or look upon, Mirar en hito, or Mirar de hito en hito.
to Stand staring, as haires do, or those that are frighted, Espeluzar, Erizarse.
Staring, Mirando en hito.
a Star or starling, Estornino.
to shine like the Stars, Resplandecer, Brillar.
a Star, Estrella.
beset with Stars, Estrellado. (cerse).
to Start, Asustarse, Sobresaltarse, Ertremar.
a Starter, Asustado.
Starting, Súto, Sobresalto.
a Startop or high shooc, Abarca.
to Starve, Morir de hambre, Ahilarse de hambre.
Starv'd, Muerto de Hambre, Ahilado.
Starving, Muriendo de hambre, Ahilandose.
Starwort, an Herb so call'd, Eltrellada.
a State, or degree, Estado, Condición.
a State, or Estate of a Man, Hazienda.
to be Stately or proud, Ser altivo, or Gracioso, Tercer fausto.
Stately, Altivo, Gracioso, Supérbo.
Statelyness, Altivez, Gravedad, Supérbia, Sobervia, Fausto.
a Station, Estado, Estación.
a Stationer, Mercader de papel.
a Statue, or Image, Estatua.
the Statute, or proportion of the Body, Estatuta. (Decreto).
a Statute, or Act of Parliament, Estatuto.
a Statute law, Pragmática, Pragmática, Edicto.
a Statute for Rogues, Ley para Pícaros, Pragmática contra Pícaros. (Ley).
a book of Statutes, Libro de Leyes, Recopilación.
Stavesacre, an Herb, Abarráz, Avarráz, Favaráz, Havaráz, Paparraz.
a Stalk, vid. Stalk.
to Stauch, vid. to Stanch.
to Stay, &c. vid. Stale.
Stead, as instead, En lugar de.
Steady, Firme, Constante.
Steadily, Firmemente, Constantemente.
Steadiness, Firméza, Constancia.
a Steak of flesh, Costilla, Tajada de carne.
to Steal, Estafar, Hurtar, Robar.
to Steal upon one, Cogér de Sobre-salto.
a Stealer, Hurtador.
Stealing, Hurto.
Stolen upon, by surprise, Cogido de sobresalto.
by Stealth, A hurtadas, a hurtadillas, de secreto.
a Stear, or bullock, Novillo.
to make Stedfast, stable, sure, and strong, Establecer. (Immutable).
Stedfast, Constante, Estable, Firme, Fijo.
making Stedfast, Establecimiento.
Stedfastness, Constancia, Firméza.
Stedfastly, Constantemente, Establemente.
Firmemente, Fijamente, Inmudablemente.
a Steed, Cavalgadura.
Steel, Acero, Azero.
a Steel to strike Fire, Ellabón.
Steel'd, Azerado.
to Steel or strengthen with steel, Azerar, Guarnecer con acero.
a Steelgias, Vericle, Espéjo de Azero.
Steeple, Derechura, Asperéza de sulco.
a Steep, Riscolito, Derecho, Aspero de subida.
to get up a Steep hill, or rock, Enriscarse, Subir por asperézis.
to Steep, or macerate, Macerar, Empapar.
Steep'd, Empapado, Macerado.
a Steeper, Campanario.
a Steer, or Stear, Buéy novillo.
a Stern or stalk, Tallo de la yerva, o planta.
to Stench, or stanch, Estancar, Retenir, Retenir.
a Stence, Hedor. (Dar paties).
to Steep, or go by steps, Andar, Patear.
to Steep aside, Apartar.
to Steep back, Retirarse.

a foot-Step, Vestigio, Pisada, Huella.
a Step, Pálo.
a Stepmother, Madrastra.
a Stepfather, Padrastro, Padastro.
a Stepson, Entenado.
a Stepdughter, Entenada.
Sterile or barren, Sin fruto, Estéril, Desaprovechado.
Sterility, Esterilidad.
to look Stern, Mirar con genio.
Stern, Austero.
Sternely, Austeramente.
Sternness, Austeridad.
the Stern of a ship, La Pópa.
a Steward, Mayordomo.
a Stewardship, Mayordomía.
to Stew, Estofar, Ahogar.
Stew'd, Estofado, Ahogado.
a Stew, or Hot-house, Estufa, Baño.
the Stews brothel house, or lewd house, Burdel, Putería, Mancebía.
to Stich, Pespuntar.
Stich'd, Pespuntado.
a Stich, Pespunte, Púnto.
to Stick, Pegar.
to Stick in the Mire, vid. Mire.
a Sticking, Pegadura.
a Stick, Varilla. (Enmendar).
to Stick fast or be entangled, Enrascar, Enredar.
Stickling, Apadrinadura.
a Stickler, or Un pine, Tercero, Medianero.
to Stick for, Apadrinar.
a Stickler, Padrino.
a bog-Ste, Pocilga, cabúrda.
to be Stiff, Aterecer, Envararse, Entesarse.
Stiffness, Aterimiento, Envaramiento, Tiesura.
Stiff, Aterido, Envarado, Tendido.
Stiffness of Sinews, Calambre, Envaramiento, Entesamiento.
Stiffly, Tiesamente.
to Stifle, Quitar el refuello.
a Stile, Portillo.
a Stile in Writing, Estilo.
to Stile, Nombrar, Llamar.
Stil'd, Llamado, Nombrado.
to be Still or Calm, Estar quieto, Quietar, Estar quedo.
Still, Quedo.
Still'd or quieted, Acallado, Aquietado.
a Still, Alambique, Alquilara.
to Still or distil, Estilar.
Still, or yet, Aún.
Stillness, Quietud.
a Stile, ganco, Zanco.
to Sting, Picar.
a Sting, Buitrulo.
Sting'd, Picado.
Stinging, Picadura.
one that Stings, Picador.
to Stink, Hedér.
a Stink, Hedór.
Stink of the Arm pits, Sobaguina, Hedór.
Stinking, Hediondo. (de Sobacos).
Stinkingly, Hediondamente.
to Stint, Limitar.
Stinted, Limitado.
a Stinting, Limitación.
Stipend, Estipendio.
to Stir, Remover, Meneár. (ver Incitar).
to Stir or raise up, Levantar, Alzar, Comover.
Stirr'd up, Levantado, Alzado, Comovido, Incitado.
Stirr'd, Removido, Meneado.
a Stirrop, Eltribo.
Stirrepleathers, Acciones.
to Stich, Pespuntar.
a Stich in sowing, Púnto, Puntada.
to Stich or sow, Cozer.
Stich'd, Pespuntado.
Stock or store, Caudal.
the Stock of a Tree, El pie del árbol, El tronco del árbol.
a Stockfish, Marchuz, Salma.
Stock or race whereof one comes, Abolengo, Aleña, Estirpe.
a Stock dove, vid. Dove.
to set in Stock, Ponér en el cépo, Incepar.
a pair of Stocks, Cépo.
a little pair of Stocks, Cepillo.
a Stock Gillyflower, Clavelina.
M m m m m Stock

Stockings, Cálzas, Médias.
a pair of linen Stockings, Calcetas.
a Stone, Estola.
Stolen, Hurfado, Robado.
to Stomach a matter, Relentirse, Amohinarse, Tomar mal.
to have Stomach or Courage, Tener buen ánimo, o coraje.
Stomach, heart, or courage Pecho, Corazón, Estómago, Animo, Coraje.
the Stomach, Estómago.
a Stone, Piedra.
a Stoner, Apedreador.
to Stone, Apedrear.
Ston'd, Apedreado. (triflar.)
to grow hard as Stone, Empedernecer, Pedra mill Stone, AlíARGE de molino, Mucla, Piedra de molino.
a precious Stone, Piedra preciosa.
a little Stone, Pedrizita, or Pedrezuela, Piedrecita.
a Pebble Stone, Guija.
full of Stones, Pedregoso.
Stony, Empedernido.
a Stony Place, Pedregal.
Ston'd, or the Stones taken away in raisins or the like, Destitido.
to Stone, or take away such Stones, Destitir.
a Stone of any Fruit, as Apricots or the like, Huélflo.
a Stoning, Apedreamiento.
a blow with a Stone, Pedrada.
the Stone in the Kidneys, or bladder, Piedra.
Stones in raisins, Granillos, Títos.
a Stone of a Grape, Granillo, Tito.
a cherry Stone and such like, Cuéscio, Huélflo.
the Stones of Man or Beast, Testículos, Co.
a Stone bow, Ballista. (xónes.)
a Stone wall, Albarrada.
a Stool, Banco.
a foot-Stool, Un banquillo de pie, Escabelillo.
to have a mind to go to Stool, Tener gana de cagar, o de hazer cámara.
to go to Stool, Hazer cámara, yr al baçin, yr al servicio, Purgar el vientre, Hazer las necesidades.
to cause to go to Stool, Hazer yr al baçin, Provocar cámara.
a close Stool, Baçin, Servicio, Servidor, Mónico.
to Stoop, Abaxarse, Inclínarse, Doblarle.
Stooping, Inclínandose, Abaxándose, Doblandose.
to Stop, stay, or hinder, Estorvar, Impedir, Detener. (Detenido.)
Stopp'd or hindered, Estorvado, Impedido.
Stopp'd in the Body, Opilido.
Stopping in the Body, Opilación.
to Stop or cover, Atapar, Tapar.
to Stop or make retire, Ciár, Retirar.
a Stop or let, Represa, Detención.
a Stop or stay, Pausa.
to Stop in the smoke or fune, Abahar.
Stopp'd or cover'd, Atapado, Tapado, Cubierto.
full of Stops or lets, Embaragoso.
Stopp'ng, Embaraz, Embargo.
to Stopping up, Atapar, Tapar.
a Stoppel, Tapado, Tapón.
Storax, Azumbar, Estoraque.
to Store or lay up in store, Almacenar, Guardar.
well stor'd or furnish'd, Fornecido.
a Storehouse, Almacén.
Store, Abundancia.
a Story, Historia.
a Story of a bottle, Sobrablo, Alto.
a Stork, Ciguena.
a little Stork, Ciguelino.
an herb call'd Storkeshill, Pico de ciguena.
a Storm or tempest, Borrasca, Tormenta, Tempelad.
to Storm, Bravear, Enfurecerse.
Stormy, Puerilísimo, Tormentoso.
a Stove, Estufa.
Stout, Valiente, Animoso.
Stoutly, Valientemente, Animosamente.
Stoutness, Animo, Valor.
to grow Stout, Cobrar, Animo.
to Straddle, or go straddling, y desparrocado, Desparrocado.
Stradling, Desparrocado.
to Straddle or wander, Errar el camino.

Yr fuera decaminado Andar descominado, Andar perdido.
a Straggler, Descominado, Vagamundo.
to Stray abroad, or go astray, Descominar, a Straler, Descominado. (Andar errado.)
to make Stright, Enderezar.
Stright, Derecho.
Strightness, Derechura.
Strightly, Derechamente.
Strightening, Enderezamiento.
Stright, Derecho.
Stright ways, Incontinente.
to Strain Liquor, Apurar, Colar.
Strain'd Liquor, Apurado, Colado.
a Strainer, Coladero.
to Strain or bind, Apretar.
Straining hard together, Apretamiento.
Strain'd hard together, Apretado.
to Straiten, Enderezar.
Straitned, Enderezado.
Straitly, Estrechamente.
Straitness, Estrechéz.
the Strand, La Playa.
Strange, Extraño.
Strangeness, Extrañeza.
Strangely, Extrañamente.
a Stranger, Avenedizo, Estrangero, Forastero.
to Strangle, Ahogar, Dar Garróte.
Strangled, Ahogado, Dado garróte.
a Strangling, Ahogamiento, Garróte.
the strangury, when one makes water by drops and that with pain, Angúria, Estangúria.
a Strap, Correa de cuero.
a Stratagem, Ardíd, Estratagema.
a Strawberry, Fraga, Fréga.
to Stuff with Straw, vide Stiff.
short Straw, Pajuela.
Straw, Paja.
a place full of Straw, Pajiso lugar.
to Strain, vide Strain.
a Stream or River, Arroyo.
a little Stream, Riachuelo.
a Streamer or Pendant in a ship, Flámula, Gallardete, Vanderola.
a Street, Calle.
to go up and down the Street much, Callejeár, Andorreár.
a narrow Street, Calleja.
a woman walker of Streets, Callejera.
Streight, Estrecho, Angosto.
to Streighten, Enfangostar, Estrechar.
Streightening, Enfangostamiento, Estrechamiento.
Streightned, Estrechado, Enfangostado.
to Strein or to Strain, Apretar.
to Strengthen or make strong, Arrezir, Corroborar, Hazer Fuerte, Fortalezer, Fortificar.
Strengthened, Arrezido, Corroborado, Hécho fuerte, Fortalecido, Fortificado.
Strength, Fuerça, Fortaleça.
Strengthening, Fortaleciendo.
to Stretch out, Estender, Tender, Estirar.
Stretching out, Estendimiento, estiramiento.
Stretching with slouth or for sleep, Esperézo.
to stretch as they that gape for sleep, Esperezarse.
Stretch'd out, Embarado, Esténso, or Exténso, Tendido, Estirado.
to Strew, Esparzir.
Strew'd, Esparzado.
Strict, Estrecho, Severo, Riguroso.
Strictly, Apretadamente, Rigurosamente.
Strictness, Rigor, Severidad.
to Stride, Abrir las Piernas.
to stride over a ditch or such like, Atrancar.
Strife, Contienda.
to Strike with a spar, Espolear.
to Strike with a wand, Varear.
to Strike or smite, Golpear, Herir.
to Strike on the Cheek, Abofetear.
to Strike back, Rebatir.
to Strike down, Derribar.
to Strike through, Atravessar.
to Strike the Colours, Abaxar la vaulera.
Stricken, Golpeado, Herido.
that Striketh on the cheek, Abofeteador.
Stricken about the Ears, Abofeteado.
Striking, Golpeando.
Striken down, Achocado, Derribado.
a Stroke, Golpe.
a Stroke with a Bowl, Balazo.

to Strike as a Bushel or other Measure, Arasar, Rafar.
Striked as a Bushel, Arrasado, Rafado.
such Striking, Arrasadura, Rafadura.
to Strike sail, Amaynar la vela.
to Strike up hose smooth on the legs, Estirar.
hose Strok'd up smooth, Estiradas calças.
a String, Cordel, Cuérda, Cinta.
a string of an instrument of musick, Cuérda.
to tie with Strings, Atar.
the string of the tongue, Frenillo de la lengua.
purse Strings, Cordones de bolsa.
to String an Instrument, Encordar.
to String Beads, Enhilar.
a String of Pearl, Hilo de perlas.
a Stripe, Golpe, Agote.
beaten with Stripes, Açotado.
a Stripling, Mançébo.
to Strip, Desnudar.
Strip or stripp'd, Desnudo, Desnudado.
to Strive or contend, Contender, Bregar, Debatir, Repugnar, Porfiar, Procurar, Hazer su poder.
Strife, or Contention, Debate, Repugnancia, Porfia, Contienda.
a Striver, Contendedor, Porfiado.
Striving, Porfiando, contendiendo.
Strivingly, A porfia.
to Stroke, Passar la mano.
to Stroke gently with the hand, Halagar con la mano amorosamente.
the Stroke of a Bullet shot, Balazo.
a Stroke, Golpe, Porrazo.
a Stroke with a staffe, Bastonazo.
Strok'd, Halagado, Passado la mano.
Strong, Forçoso, Fuerte, Robusto, Vigoroso.
Strong as an Oak, Roblezo.
Strongly, Fuertemente.
to Strow, Esparzir.
Strow'd, Esparzado.
a Strower, Esparizador.
a Strowing, Esparziendo.
Struck, Herido, Golpeado.
Struck back, Rebatido.
Struck down, Derribado.
Struck through, Atraveçado.
a Structure, Edificio.
to Struggle, Forcejar.
a Strugling, Forcejadura.
Strumpet or whore, Puta, Ramera, Cantonera.
a common Strumpet, Muger pública.
Strung, Encordado.
Stubble, Raltrójo.
Stubborn, Pertinaz, Contumaz, Cabezudo.
Stubbornness, Contumacia, Pertinacia, Terquedad.
Stubbornly, Contumazmente, Pertinazmente, Terquemete.
a Stud in Girdles, and such like, Cnatón, Tachón, Clavete.
Studded, Tachonado, Chatonado, Claveteado.
Studding, Clavazón.
to Study or apply the mind, Estudiar.
Study, Estudio.
a Study, idem.
a Student, Estudiante.
Studying, Estudiando.
Studios, Estudio.
Studiosly, Estudioamente.
a Stue, wide Stew.
a Stues or Brothelhouse, Burdel, Casa de putas, Puteria.
Stuff, Estofa, materia.
Household Stuff, Muebles de Casa.
to Stuff, Embutar, Entupecer, Recalcar, Henchir, Atellar.
to Stuff with straw, Estivar.
Stuffed, Embutido, Atellado.
Stuffed with straw, Estivado.
Straw to stuff withal, Estiva.
to Stumble, Estropear, Titubear, Tropezar.
Stumbled, Estropeado, Tropezado.
a Stumbler, Tropezador.
a Stumbling, Tropezco, Tropezadura, Estropeço.
a Stumbling Block, Tropezadero.
a Stump of a tooth, Raygon.
the Stump of a tree, El pie del árbol, Tronco.
Stung, Picado. (mientos.)
Stupelation, Atontamiento, Entumeci.
Stupid, Estúpido, Tonto, Atontado.

S U.

Subaltern, Subalterno.
a Sub Deacon, Subdiacono.
a Subdelegate, Subdelegado.
to Subdivide, Despartir.
Subdivided, Despartido.
to Subdue, Sojuzgar.
Subdued, Sojuzgado.
a Subduer, Sojuzgador.
to make Subject, Sujetar. (Cído.
made Subject, Avallado, Sujetado, Redu-
a Subject, Súbdito, Súdito, Vallallo.
Subjected, Sujetado.
to bring under Subjection, Sujetar.
Subjection, Sujeción.
the Subjunctive Mood, Subjuntivo.
Sublimate, Soliman.
to Sublimate, Sublimar.
Sublimated, Sublimado.
Sublime, Alto, Levantado.
Sublimely, Altamente.
Sublimity, Altura.
to Submit, Sometérse.
Submitted, Sometido.
Submit, Sumiso, Humilde.
Submission, or *submitting*, Sumisión, Obe-
diencia, Humildad.
Submissive, Obediente, Sumiso, Humilde.
Submissively, Humilmente, Sumisamen-
te, Obedientemente.
to Suborn, Sobornar.
Suborn'd, Sobornado.
a Suborner, Sobornador.
a Suborning, Soborno.
to Subscribe, Firmar.
Subscribed, Firmado.
Subscription, Subscripción, Firma.
to levy a Subsidy, Empadronar, Cogér al-
cabalas.
Subsidy, Alcabala.
to Subsist, Subsistir, Vivir.
Subsistence, Sústento.
Substance, Sustancia.
Substance, or Goods, Biénes, Hazienda, Su-
stancia.
Substantial, Material, Sustancial.
Substantially, Sustancialmente.
to Substitute, Sostituir, Substituir, Sudelegar.
Substituted, Sostituto, Subdelegado.
a Substituting, Sostitución, subdelegamiénto.
Substitution, Substitución.
Subtily, Sutiléza, Subtiléza.
Subtil, Sutil.
a Subtil Devise, Sutiléza.
Subtily, Sutilmente.
to Subtilize, Sutilizar.
to Subtract, or take a less Number out of
a greater, Restar.
Subtracted, Réstado.
to Subvert, Subvertir.
Subverted, Subvertido.
a Subverter, Subvertidor.
Subverting, Subvertimiento.
Subversion, Subversión.
the Suburbs of a City, Arrabal, Arrabales.
to Succeed, Sucedér.
Succeeded, Sucedido.
a Successor, Sucetór, Decendiente.
a Succession, Decendencia, Sucetión.
Successive, Sucetivo.
Successively, Sucetivamente.
to give Success to, dar Sucetlo.
the Success or event of a thing, Sucetlo.
Success, buen Sucetlo.
Succinct, Sucinto, Breve.
Succinctly, Sucintamente.
Succory, Escarola.
to Succor, aid or help, Acorrér, Socorrér,
Ayudar.
Succor, Acórro, Socórro, Ayúda.
Succor'd, Socorrido, Ayudado.
a Succorer, Ayudador, Socorredor.
Succorring, Socorriendo.
Succorless, Desayudado, sin Socórro.
Such, Tal.
Such as, Tal qual.
in Such sort, en tal suéte o manera.
to Suck, Chupar, Mamar.
to give Suck, Amamantar.
giving Suck, Amamantamiento.
Suck'd or suckt up, Chupado, Mamado

a Suck spigot or Drinkard, Borracho.
a Sucking, Chapadura, Mamadura.
a Sucking Child, Crianza de teta.
to Suckle, Amamantar.
Suckled, Amamantado.
Sudden or sudden, Repentino, Súbito, Im-
provisto.
on a Sudden, Defúbito, Derepente.
Suddenly, Repentinamente.
to Sue in Law, Pleitear.
Sued, Pleiteado.
Suing, Pleiteando.
to Sue for, Pretendér.
Su'd for, Pretendido.
to Sue to, Suplicar.
Su'd to, Suplicado.
a Suter in Law, Pleyteante.
Suet, Grásia, Gordo.
to Suffer or permit, Permitir.
Suffer'd, or permitted, Permitido.
Sufferance, or Permission, Permisión.
to Suffer or endure, Padecér, Padescér,
Sufrir, Tolerar.
to Suffer with another, Compadecér.
Sufferance, Sufrimiento.
Sufferable, Sufrible.
Suffered, Padecido, Padescido.
Suffering, Padecimiento, Padescimiento,
Tolerancia.
to Suffice or be sufficient, Bastar, Abastar,
Ser Bastante.
Sufficient, Abastado, Bastante, Hárto, Su-
ficiénte.
Sufficiency, Suficiencia.
Sufficiently, Bastantemente, Suficientemente.
to Suffocate, Ahogar, Sufocar.
Suffocated, Sufocado, Ahogado.
Suffocation, Sufocación, Ahogamiento.
a Suffrage, Sufragio.
Sugar, Açúcar, or Azúcar.
dress'd with Sugar, Açucarado.
Sugar candy, Açúcar piedra or Açúcar candy.
a Sugar cane, Caña dulce.
Sugar made Liquid, Almirar.
to Suggest, Inculcar.
Suggested, Inculcado.
a Suit, or Sute, Pléyto, Súplica.
Sullenness, Pertinacia, Emperramiento.
Sullen, Pertinaz, Emperrado.
Sulphur, çufre, Açúfre.
a Summary, Sumario.
Summarily, Sumariamente.
to Sum up, Sumar.
a Sum, Súma. (Cantidad.
a Sum of Money, Súma de dinéto, Cantía,
to Summon, Citar Emplazar.
Summon'd, Emplazado, Citado.
Summons, Pláço, Plázo, Citación.
a Summoning, Citación, Emplazamiento.
a Sumpter Horse, Acenila.
Sumptuous, Elpléndido Suntuoso, Magnífico.
Sumptuousness, Sumptuosidad.
Sumptuously, Suntuosamente.
Sunday, Domingo.
to Sunder, Apartar, Despartir, Arredrar,
Despartir.
to put a Sunder, Arredrar, Apartar.
put a Sunder, Arredrado, Apartado.
Sundry, Divérto, Vário.
to Sun, or dry in the Sun, Secar al Sól,
Sacar al Sól.
the Sun, Sól.
Sun'd, Sacado, al Sól.
a warm Sun-shining Bank, Abrigaño, A-
brigo.
Sunning, Tomando el Sól.
the warm Sun shine, Abigo.
a Sun-beam, Rayo del Sól.
Sun burnt, Quemado del Sól.
a Sunny Place, Abrigaño.
the Sun rises, El Sól Sale.
th Sun sets, El Sól se pone.
a Superficies, Superficie.
Superficial, Superficial.
Superficially, Superficialmente.
to be Superfluous, Superchar, Ser super-
fluo, Sobrar.
Superfluous, Superfluo.
Superfluously, Superfluamente.
Superfluity, Superfluidad, Superchar.
a Superior, Superior.

Supernatural, Sobre-natural.
Supernaturally, Sobre-naturalmente.
a Superscription, Sobre-escrito.
Superstition, Superfición.
Superstitious, Superficioso.
Superstitiously, Superficiosamente.
to Sup or sip, Sorber.
a Sup, Sorbo.
Sup'd, Sorbido.
Supping, Sorbiendo.
to Sup or eat ones Supper, Cenar.
Supped, Cenado.
a Supper, Cena. (Charistia.
the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, Eu-
Supping, Cenando.
Supplies, Sin cenar.
to Supplant, Engañar.
a Supplanter, Engañador.
Supplanting, Engaño.
to make Supple or soft, Ablandar.
a Suppliant, or Petitioner, Suplicante.
a Supplication, Súplica.
to Supply, Suplir.
a Supply, Suplimiento, Socórro.
to Support or maintain, Manterér, Sopor-
tar, Sustenér, Sustainir.
Supported, Soportado, Sustenido, Sustain-
tado, Mantenido.
a Supporting, Sustainir.
Support, Sustainir, Mantener.
a Supporter, Sustainidor, Soportador, Man-
tenedor.
to Suppose or to think, Congeturar, Supo-
nér, Pensar, Imaginar.
Suppos'd, Conjeturado, Supuélto, Pensado,
Imaginado. (Imaginación.
a Supposition, Congetura, Suposición,
Suposición.
a Suppository, Ca'a, Calilla, Mécha.
to Suppress, Sujetar, Abatir.
Suppress'd, Sujetado, Abatido.
a Suppressor, Sujetador, Abatidor.
a Suppression, Abatimiento, Sujeción.
the Supremacy, El Principado, Primado.
Supreme, Supremo, Soberano.
Supremely, Supremamente, Soberanamente.
to Surbate on the Feet with going, Despear.
Surbared, Despeado.
Surbating, Despeadura.
to Surcease, leave off or give over, Sobre-
tér, Dexar, Dehítir.
to Surcharge, Sobrecargar.
a Surcharge, Sobrecarga.
a Surcingle or Girth, Cincha.
to make Sure, Asegurar.
Surety, Seguridad.
Sure stable or steafal, Seguro.
Sure or affe'd, Seguro.
Such, Seguramente.
Surety, Seguridad.
a Surety, Fiador.
to be Surety for another, Salir por fiador.
to give Sureties, Dar fianças.
one that has given sureties, Fiado, Abonado.
to Surfer, Glotonear, Comer demasiado,
Abitarfe.
Surfered, Comido demasiado, Abito, Abitado.
to Surge or rise up in waves, Levantar olas.
a Surge or wave, Ola, onda.
Surging, Ondando.
a Surgeon, Cirujano.
Surgery, cirugía.
Sury, Malhumorado.
to Surmise, Congeturar.
a Surmise, Congetura.
Surmis'd, Congeturado.
a Surmiser, Congeturador.
Surmising, Congetura. (Sobre calir.
to Surmount, Excedér, Passar, Sobrepujar.
Surmounted, Excedido, sobrepujado, Pas-
sado.
to Surmount, Dar Sobre nombre, or Apellido.
Surmount, Llamado por sobre nombre, or
Apellido.
a Surmount, Apellido, Sobrenombre.
to Surpass, Aventajar, Excedér, Pasar, ven-
zar.
Surpass'd, Excedido. (Copa.
Surpassing, Excediendo, Aventajando, Ha-
ciendo ventaja.
a Surplice, Sobrepel. Roquete.

to Surprize, Tomar de sob.e salto, Sobre-
 saltar
Surpris'd, Sobresaltado.
a Surprize, Sobresalto
a Surprizer, Sobresaltador.
to Surrender, Entregár.
Surrendered, Entregado.
Surrendering, Entregando.
a Sower, Alarife.
to Sow, Bieir mas que ótro
to Suspect or mistrust, Barruntár, Recelar,
 Sospechar.
Suspected, Barruntado, Sospechado, Rice-
 lado
Suspecting, Sospechando, Burruntando,
 Recelando
Suspicion, Barrunto, Reçélo Sospécha,
 Imaginación.
Suspicious, çeloso, Receloso, Sospechoso,
 Imaginativo.
Suspiciously, Sospechosamente.
to Suspend, Suspendér.
Suspended, Suspendido.
Suspending, Suspención.
Suspense, Suspénsa.
to Sustain or suffer, Sostener, Sufrir, Pá-
 decér.
Sustain'd, Sostenido, Sufrido, Padecido.
Sustaining, Sostentamiento, Sustentamien-
 to, Sufrimiento.
Sustenance, Food, or Nourishment, Su-
 sliento, Nutrimiento.
Sutable, Concordable.
a Sute in Law, Pléyto.
to Sue, Pleitear:

S W.

a Swab or thing to make clean a Ship with,
 Barredéro.
to Swaddle or Swath, Faxár.
Swadling, Faxamiénto, Embolvedúra, Embolviimiento.
a Swadling Band, Fâxa.
to Swage, or Assuage, Mitigár, Aleviár, Ablandár.
to Swagger, Braveár.
a Swaggerer, Bravatéro.
a Swain, Zagál, Zagala.
to Swallow, Tragár.
Swallowing, Tragándo.
Swallow'd, Tragádo.
a Swallower, Tragadér.
a Swallow Bird, Golondrina.
the Herb Swallow Wort, Celedónia.
a Swan, Cisne, Císne.
the Steward of Bacon, Cortezón de tocino, Cortéça.
a Swarm of Bees, Enxambre.
to Swarm or assemble together, Enxambrár.
Swart Colour, Alvár.
Swartby, Movénio.
Swartiness, Movénz.
to Swave, Desváse.
Swav'd, Desvádo.
to Swath, Faxar.
a Swathing band, Fâxa.
Swath'd, Faxádo.
Swaying or rolling from one side to another,
 Bayhéu, or Bayvéu.
Sway, Mando.
to bear Sway, Mandár, Tener mando.
to Swear, Jurár.
a Swearer, Jurador.
Swearing, Jurando.
a Swearing, Juramiento.
to Swear falsely, Perjurar.
Sworn, Jurado.
to Swear, Jurado.
to Swear upon, Sudar hilo a hilo.
Swear, Nojar a Nojar.
a Swearing Place, Sudadero.
fell of Swear, Mergolo, Sudado.
to Swear, Jurado.
a Swearer, Sudadero.
a the body of Swear, Calornio.
the body of Swear, Calornamiento.
made fleshy with Swear, Calornado.
to Swear, Jurar.
the Sweeping of a House, Barreduras de casa.

a Sweeper, Barrédór.
the Sweeping of a House, &c. Barrédúra.
Swept, Barrido.
to Sweeten or make sweet, Adulçár, En-
dulçár, Enduçár.
Sweetening, Endulçadúra.
a Sweetening Apple, Maçána dúlçe.
Sweet new Wine, Mosto.
of Sweet Wine, Mostoso.
Sweet, Dúlçe, Suave.
Sweetness, Dulçór, Dulçúra, Suavedad.
Sweetly, Suavemente.
to smell Sweet, Oler bién.
A Sweet smell, Fragráncia.
Sweet hart, Mi vida.
to Swell, rise or be puffed up, Hinchár.
a Swelling, Cómha, Hinchazón.
a Swelling in the Finger call'd the Fellon,
Cómha pequena.
a Swelling in the Flank, Encórdio.
Swelling after a Stroke, Bóllo de golpe.
Swelling of a wound, Diviêssó.
a Swelling about the Thaws, Lobanillo.
Swelling, Hinchamiento, Hinchadúra, Hin-
chazón.
Swell'd, Hinchádo.
a Swelling call'd a Carbuncle, Lobanillo.
Swelling in the Flesh, call'd the Fashions,
Lóbado.
a Swible of Iron, Ellabón.
Swiftness, Ligeréza.
Swift, Ligéro.
a Swift ship, Patáche, Patáje.
a Swift stream, Raudál.
Swifter, Mas Ligéro.
Swiftest, Ligeríssimo.
Swiftly, Ligeramente.
to Swill, Bevorreár, Bevoroteár.
to Swim, Nadár.
to Swim above, Sóbrenadár.
to Swim over a Place, Passár a nádo.
a Swimmer, Nadadór.
Swimming, Nadadúra.
a Swimming Place, Nadadéro.
a Swine, Puérco.
a Swinestigh, Pocílga, çahúrda.
to Swindge, beat or whip, Açotár, casti-
gár, aporreár.
to Swing by the Arms, &c. Columpiár.
Swinging in a Coard, or Bough, or hang-
ing to stretch by the Armes, Colúmpio.
a Switzer, Suýço.
a Swivel, Ellabón.
Swollen, Hinchado.
a Swoon, Desmayo.
to Swoon, Desmayarse.
Swoon'd, Desmayádo.
a Swooning, Desmayo.
Sworn, Jurádo.
to draw the Sword, Desenvaynár la espáda.
a Sword, Espada.
garded with a Sword, Ceñido con espáda.
a Sword Fish, Pez Espadá.
Hangers for a Sword, Tíros, or Talabárte.

S Y.

a *Sycamore Tree*, Higuera brava.
a *Sycophant*, Adulador.
a *Syllogism*, or an *Argument of three parts*,
Silopismo.
a *Symbol*, Símbolo.
to *Symbolize*, Simbolizar.
Symmetry, Proporción.
Sympathy, Simpatía.
to *Sympathize*, Simpatizar.
a *Symptom*, Síntoma, Señal.
a *Synagogue*, Sinagoga.
a *Synod*, Sínodo Concilio.
Syrup, Alhívar, Jarabe.
a *Syrbe*, Cuaderna.

1.

T *Abacco, Tabáco.*
a Taber, or Tabret, Tamboril, Tam-
boino.
to play on the Taber, Tamborileár, Tocar
el Tamborino.
a Tabereé, Tamborileéro, Tamborineéro.

a *She Taberer*, Tamborilera, Tamborinera.
a *Tabernacle*, Tabernáculo.
to *lay the Table*, Ponér la méfa.
a *Table*, Méfa.
a *round Table*, Méfa redónda.
a *Table Cloth*, Mantél.
a *Table Napkin*, Pañezuelo de méfa, Servilleta.
a *Table or Desk to write on*, Buféte.
Tables to write in, Libro de Memória.
to *play at Tables*, Jugár a las Táblas.
a *pair of Tables*, Tablero.
a *Table-Man*, Tábla del tablero.
a *Table Player*, Jugador de táblas.
a *Tablet which hangs about the Neck*, Collarico, Joya, Joyel.
a *Tabret*, vide *Taber*.
to *Tack or nail to something*, Claveteár, Tacholeár.
to *Tack at sea*, Házer otro bórdo.
a *Tack or small Nail*, Clávillo, Tachuéla.
the *Ropes in a ship call'd Tacks*, Escotás, Amiras.
the *Tackling of a ship*, Armazón de Náve.
Taffery, or Taffeta, Tafetán.
a *Tag, or Aglet*, Clavillo de Agujeta, Herréte de Agujeta.
to *wag the Tail*, Meneár la cóla.
a *Tail*, Cóla.
a *Tailor*, Sáltre.
to *Take*, Tomár, Prendér.
to *take in good part*, Tomár en buena parte.
to *take away the Table*, Alçár la Méfa.
to *take in Hand*, Emrendér.
to *take Heed*, Andár con recáto.
to *take Hold*, Asir.
to *take Napping*, Sobresaltár.
to *take up*, Alçár.
Taken in Hand, Emrendído.
taken Heed off, Recatádo.
taken Napping, Sobresaltádo.
taken up, Alçádo.
Taken, Tomádo.
to *Take out of his House*, Sacár de cáfa, Echár de cáfa.
Taking, Tóma.
to *tell Tales, or blase abroad Reports*, Contár cuéntos, or Fábulas.
a *Tale*, Cuénto, Fábula.
trifling Tales, Hablillas.
full of Tales, Llénno de mentiras.
a *Tally or score*, Tája.
Tally'd, Tajádo.
a *Talent*, Talénto.
to *Talk*, Hablar, Platicár, Comunicár, Conferir.
to *Talk in ones Ear*, Jugár de oreja, Hablar a la oreja.
Talk, Colóquio, Hábla.
a *Talker*, Habladór, Palabréro, Parléro, Garladór.
Talking, Hablándo.
Talkative, Palabréro, Parléro, Habladór, Garladór.
Talness of Person, Altura.
Tall, Alto, Lárgo, Crecído.
not *Tall*, Pequeño, chico, córto.
very *Tall*, muy A'lto.
Tallage, Custom, or Impost, Alcabála, Alcavala.
to *dip in Tallow*, Ensebár.
to *Tallow*, idem.
Tallow, Sébo, Cévo.
Tallow melted, Sébo derretído.
Tallowy, full of tallow, Sebófo.
a *Tallon, or claw*, Gárra.
the *Tamarisk-Tree*, A'tarçe.
to *Tame, make tame, subdue, or bring under*, Domár, Desbravar, Desembravecér, Domestlicár, Amanfár.
Tame, Doméstlico, Mánfo.
Tameness, Domestlicueza.
Tamed, Domádo, Amanfádo.
a *Tamer*, Domadór, Amanfadór.
Taming, Desembravecimiento, Amanfamiento.
Tamely, Domestlicamente, Manfamente.
a *Tankard*, Cantara.
a *Tankard maker*, Cantaréro.
a *Water*.

4117. 1867.

a Water-Tankard, Cántaro.
a Tanner, Curtidor.
to Tan-leather, Curtir.
Tanned, Curtido.
a Tan-house, Tenería.
Tanning, Curtidura.
Tape, Cinta de hilo.
a Taper, or Candle, Vela, Candela.
Tapistry, Tapices.
to hang with Tapistry, Entapizar, Paramentar.
hang'd with Tapistry, Paramentado, Entapizado.
to Tap Vessels, Ponér tornillos en barriles, or Ponér caña.
a Tap, Tornillo, Caña.
a Tapsier, Bodeguero.
Tardy, Culpado.
Tardily, Culpadamente.
Tardiness, Culpa.
to take one Tardy, Cogér en la culpa.
Tares, Cizaña.
to sow Tares, Cizañar.
a sower of Tares, Cizañador.
a Target or Shield, Escudo, Pavéz, Tárja, Adarga.
a Targetier, Enrodelado, Escudado, Abroquelado.
a Target or short and light Buckler, which the Africans and Spaniards use, Adarga.
be that uses such a Target, Adargado.
to use such a Target, Adargár.
a Target like a Half Moon, Adarga.
to Tarry, abide or remain, Parár, Quedár, Estár.
a Tarrying, Estada, Parada.
to Tarry for one, Aguardár, Esperár.
Tarry'd for, Esperado, Aguardado.
Tarrying for, Espéra.
Tartar or lees of Wine, Hézes de vino.
a Tart, Tárta.
Tart, or sour, Agrío, Azédo, Agro.
to grow Tart, Azedár.
Tartly, Agriamente, Azedamente.
Tartness, Agrura, Azedéz.
a Task, Tarca, Atarca.
to set ones Task, Dár tarca.
Tasked, Destajado.
to end his Task, Cumplir su destajo, Acabar su tarca.
to do with Tassels, Emborlar.
done with Tassels, Emborlado.
Tassels or Knaps, Cordones de bellota, Borlas, Borlones.
a Maker of Tassels, Emborlador.
to Taste, Gústar, Provar.
a Taste, Gústo, Gustadura, Pruéva.
Tasted, Gustado, Provado.
a Taster, Gustador, Proveedor, Gentilhombre de la boca.
Tasting, Gústo, Gustadura, Pruéva.
a Tatch, or Clasp, Corchete.
Tatters, or Rags, Trápos, Andrajos, Han drajos, Trapajos.
to Tatter, Rompér, Rasgar, Hazér Andrajos.
Tatter'd, Roto, Rasgado, Hécho Andrajos.
a Tatter'd Fellow, Andrajoso.
to Tuttle, Galar, Hablar mucho, Irse de boca, Parlar.
a Tattler, Charlatan, Habladór.
a Tattling Woman, Palabreera, Habladora, Garladora.
a Tavern, Tavería.
to keep a Tavern, Tavernear.
a Taverner, Tavernero.
Taught, Avezado, Amaestrado, Disciplinado, Enseñado.
easy to be Taught, Dócil.
to Taunt, or check with reproachful words, Apodár, Motejar, Deshonrar.
a Taunt, Apodo, Mote, Motete.
Taunted, Apodado, Motejado, Deshonrado.
a Taunter, Apodador, Pizgón, Motejador, Deshonrador.
Taunting, Apodo, Motejadura, Pizga.
a Taunting Poet, Sátira.
many Taunts, Burlas, Motes, Motetes, Pizpas.

that Taunt's Burlador, Motejador, Pizgador.
Tauntingly, Apodando, Pizgando.
to Tan Leather, Curtir.
Taw'd, Curtido.
a Tawing, Curtidura.
a Tawer, or Tawer of thin Leather, Curtidor.
to Tax, Tassar, Encabezár, Ponér pécho.
Taxation or Sessment, Pécho, Derécho, Tributo.
one that pays Tax, Pechero.
Taxing, Tassa, Encabezamiento.
Tax or Tollage, Dácio, Foréira, Pécho, Alcabala, Tributo, Tassa, Derecho.

T E

to Teach, Amaestrar, Disciplinar, Enseñar.
a Teacher, Enseñador, Maestro.
Teaching, Enseñanza, Disciplina.
to Team Horses together, Juntar los caballos al carro.
to Tear the Hair, Melár cabélllos, Desgreñarse, Arrancarse los cabélllos.
Tearing or renting, Meladura, Desgreñadura.
to Tear or rent in pieces, Despedazar, Destrozar, Hazér pedaços, Rompér, Rasgar.
Tearing in pieces, Despedaçadura, Destroço, Rompedura, Rasgadura.
to shed Teares, or to weep and lament, Llorar, Lagrimar, Lamentar, Derramar lágrimas.
a Tear, Lágrima.
Teasty, or testy, Enojoso.
to give the Teat to a Child, Dár el pécho al niño, Dar la teta.
the Teate or Dug, Teta.
Tedious, Enfadoso, Tardío, Espacioso, Largo.
Tediousness, Enfado, Mohína, Espacio.
Tediously, Espaciosamente, Enfadosamente.
fore Teeth, Diéntes.
hind Teeth, Muélas.
cheek Teeth, Colmillos.
to Tell, shew or declare, Anunciár, Narrár, Declarar.
Told or declar'd, Declarado, Contado, Dicho, Anunciado.
Telling, Diciendo, contando.
to Tell, count or number, Contar.
Telling, numbring or reckoning, Contando.
Temerity or Rashness, Temeridad.
to Temper, rule or moderate, Templar, Moderar, Governar.
Temper, Temperamento.
Temperature, Temperamento, Templanza, Temple.
Temperance, Abstinencia, Templanza, Moderación.
Temperate, Modéito, Templado, Moderado.
Temperately, Templadamente, Moderadamente.
Tempering, Templando.
a Tempest, Borrasca, Tempestad, Tormenta.
Tempestuous, Borrascoso, Tempestuoso, Tormentoso.
Tempestuously, Tempestuosamente.
a Temple or Church, Yglesia, Templo, Casa de Dios.
the Temples of the Head, Las tiénes.
Temporal or that lasts but a time, Temporal, Perecedero.
Temporally, Temporalmente.
Temporality, Temporalidad.
to Temporize, TempORIZAR.
a Temporizer, TempORIZADOR.
to Tempt or entice, Tentar, Provocar, Solicitar.
Temptation, Tentación.
Tempted, Tentado.
a Tempter, Tentador.
Ten, Diez.
a Tenant, Arrendador, Alquil de un Grupo.

to Tend, or give Attendance, Arrendar, Asistir.
to Tender or favour, Favorecer.
Tender hearted, Apocado, Piadoso.
to wax Tender hearted, Apadár.
to make Tender or soft, Ablandar, Entener.
Tender, Tierno.
Tenderness, Ternéza or Ternura.
made Tender, Ablandado, Enternecido.
Tenderly, Tiernamente.
a Tindrel or young Branch of a tree, Fisieta, Tisereta.
to play at Tennis, Jugár a la Pelota.
a Tennis Court, El juego de la Pelota.
a Tenor, Tenor.
the Tenor, effect or purport, El Tenor, lo Dispuesto, or lo determinado, lo contenido.
to make Tents, Hazér ramadas or barracas, or chogas, or Tiendas.
a Tent of Boughes, Ramada.
a Tent or Pavilion, Pavellón, Tabernáculo, Tóldo, Tienda.
a Tent or Shop, Tienda.
a Tent for a Wound, Mécha.
the Tenth, Décimo.
the Tenth Penny, El diezmo.
the Tenth or Tithes, Diezmos.
a Term, Término, Tiempo, Plazo.
Term-time, Días de Audiencia.
in the same Terms or Words, En las propias palabras. Por los mismos términos.
Termination, Determinación.
Terrene, or Earthy, Terreno.
Terrible, Terrible, Cruel, Espantable, Espantoso.
Terribly, Terriblemente, Cruelmente, Espantosamente.
to Terrify, Ponér miedo, Metér terror, or Espanto.
Terrify'd, Espantado, Atemorizado.
a Territory, Territorio.
Terror, Terror, Espanto.
a Tertian Ague, Terciaria.
a Testament, Testamento.
to make a Testament or Will, Testar.
a Testator, Testador.
the Testicles, Cojones.
Testiness, Enojo, Mohína, Tema.
Testy, Enojoso, Temoso.
Testily, Temosamente.
to Testify, Testificar.
Testified, Testificado.
a Testimonial, Testimonio.
a Tetter, Empéyne.
Tetterwoort, Celedonia.
a Text, Texto.

T H

to Thank, or give Thanks, Agradecer, Dar gracias.
Thankfulness, Agradecimiento.
Thankful, Agradecido.
Thankfully, Con agradecimiento, Agradecidamente.
That, Aquello, Aquel.
That way, Aquel camino.
to Thatch, Cubir con paja, Tejar con paja.
Thatched, Cubierto, or Tejado con paja.
a Thatched House, Casilla pagiza, or Bóhio.
Thatching, Cobertura con paja.
to Thaw, Derretir, Deshelar.
Thawing, Derretimiento, Deshelamiento.
Thawed, Derretido, Deshelado.
a Theatre, Anitéatro, Coléio, Teatro.
a Thief, Ladron.
a little Thief, Ladroncillo.
Thievery, Como ladron. Ladronamente.
Thief, Húto, Ladroncío.
Then, Entonces, Pues.
Thence, Dénde.
Thenceforth, De allí adelante.
Theological, Teológico.
Theory, Especulativa.
There, Allí.

here is, Ay.
herefore, Por esto, por tanto.
heretof, De aquello
They or them, Ellas, Ellas
Thicket, Arcañuco.
Thicken, Espesarse.
Thickness, Espesura.
thick, Espeso.
Thickly, Espesamente.
Thicken'd, Espesado.
Thick or often, Amenudo.
the Thigh, Múlo.
Armour for the Thighs, Grévas.
the Tree of a Cart, Timón.
a Thimble, Dedal, or Dóvil.
Time the Herb, Tomillo.
Thinness, Raleza, Ralura, Delgadéz.
Thin, Ralo, Delgado.
made Thin, Ralecido, Endelgado.
to make Thin, Enrascéc, Enrascéc, En-
 delgadár.
Time, Túyo.
a Thing, Cosa.
to Think, Pensar.
Metthink, Paréceme.
Thought, Cuydado, Pensamiento.
Third, Tercero.
the Third time, La tercera vez.
Thirteen, Trece.
the Thirteenth, Trezén.
Thirty, Tréynta.
the Thirtieth, Treynén.
to be Thirsty, Tener sed.
Thirst, Sed.
Thirsty, Boquiseo, Sediénto.
blood-Thirsty, Sanguinolénto.
This, Aquésta, Aquésto, Esto.
This same, Elto mismo.
this Thing, Aquésto.
a Thistle, Cárdo.
the great white Thistle, Cárdo pinto.
the Holy Thistle, Cárdo bendito.
a young Thistle, Cardillo.
wild Thistle, Cárdo silvestre.
a Place full of Thistles, Cardal.
Thistle Down, Flor del Cárdo.
Thither, Allá.
Thitherward, Hacia allá.
a Thong, Corréa.
a Thorn, Espina.
to prick like a Thorn, Picar.
hurt with Thorns, Picado.
a Thorn-bush or a Place where Thorns
 grow, Espinál.
Thorny, Espinoso.
Thornback, Raya.
Thorough, De parte a parte.
Thoroughly, Totalmente.
Those, Aquéllos.
Thou, Tu.
Though, Aunque.
Thought, Pensamiento.
Thoughtful, Pensativo.
Thoughtfuly, Pensativamente.
Thoughtfulness, Solitud, Cuydado.
a Thousand, Mil.
Thousands, Millares.
the Thousand part, Milésima parte.
a Thousandfold, Mil vézes.
Thraldom, Miséria, Servidumbre, Servitud,
 Esclavitud.
Tread, Hilo.
a pack Thread, Hilo Brunante.
to Thread a Needle, Enhilar aguja, Enhe-
 brár aguja.
a Threat, Amenaza.
to Threaten or menace, Amenazar.
a Threatner, Amenazador.
Threaten'd, Amenazado.
a Threatning, Amenaza.
Three, Trés.
Three fold, Trés doble, Tríplíce.
of Three Syllables, Trísílabo.
Three leav'd Grass, Tres en rama.
Threefold, Sesiénta.
to Thresh, Desgranar, Trillar.
Thresh'd, Desgranado, Trillado.
a Thresher, Trillador.
a Flail to Thresh with, Trilla, Trillo.
Threshing, Trilla, Trillazón, Trillazón.

a Threshhold, Umbral.
to Threshhold land, Barvechar terciando.
to Thrive, Mediar.
Thrift, Médra.
Thriftly, Medrado.
Thriftily, Medradamente.
a Throat, Gargáta, Garganta.
the Throat ball, Enéca, Tragadéro.
a Throne, Tróno.
to Throb, Suspirar, Solloçar.
a Throng, Apretura.
to Throng, Apretarse.
Throng'd, Apretado.
to cut ones Throat, Cortar el Gargáta.
the Throat, Gargáta, Garganta.
to Throttle, or strangle, Ahogar.
Throttled, Ahogado.
a Throttling, Ahogamiento.
Through, De parte a parte.
to run Through, Atravesar.
run Through, Atravesado.
to Throw or cast, Tirar.
to Throw down head-long, Despenár.
a Throw, Tiro.
Thrown, Tirado.
Throwing, Tirando.
one that Throws, Tirador.
Thrown down, Derribado, Derrocado, Der-
 runbado.
a Throwing down, Derrocamiento, Der-
 runbamiento.
a Thrust, Zorzal.
to Thrust, Empuxar.
to Thrust into a Company, Entreme-
 tarse.
a Thrust, Empuxón.
Thrusted or throng'd, Empuxado.
Thrusting, Empuxamiento.
to Thrust into a Corner, Arrinconar.
to Thrust through, Atravesar.
Thrust through, Atravesado.
Thrust up into a Corner, Arrinconado.
one that Thrusts, a Thruster, Empuxador.
a Thumb, Pulgar.
to Thump or knock, Apuñetear.
Thump'd, Apuñetado.
a Thump, Puñada.
a Thumping, Apuñetadura.
to Thunder, Atronar.
Thunder, Trueno, Tronido.
a Thunderbolt, Rayo.
Thundering, Tronando.
Thursday, Juéves.
Thwart, Travéz.
to Thwart, Oponer, Contrariar.
Thwarted, Opuésto, Contrariado.
Thwarting, Travesaño.

T I.

a Tick, Garrapata.
a Ticket, Cédula.
Ticking for a Bed, Terlíz.
to Tickle, Hazer cosquillas, Retoçar.
Tickled, Retoçado.
Ticklish, Cosquilloso, Retoçon.
Tickling, Cosquillas, Retoço.
the Tide, la Maréa.
the spring-Tide, Aguas vivas.
the neap-Tide, Aguas chillas.
Tidy, fat, or tender, Gordo y Blándo.
Tidings, Nuévas.
to bring Tidings, Traer nuévas, Dar nuévas.
to Tie or bind, Amarrar, Atar, Ligar,
 Anudar.
to Tie up or fasten the Tards of a ship in
 Battel, Abogar vérgas de Náo.
Tied up, Anudado, Atado.
Tied, Amarrado, Atado, Ligado.
one that Ties, Amarrador, Atador, Li-
 gadór.
a Tying, Atadura, Ligadura, Ligamiento,
 Amarradura.
a Tigre, Tigre.
a Tike Worm that sucks Blood, Garrapata,
 Rénzo.
to Tidy, Reír.
Tibing, Ríla.
a Tile, Tépa.
a little Tie, Tejilla.

to cover with Tile, Tejar.
a Tiler, Albañil, or Albañi, Alvañil, or
 Alvañi, Tejadór.
Durch Tile painted, Azuléjo.
Tiled, Tejado.
a Tiling, Tejadura.
to Till, Cultivar, Labrar, Arar.
Tillage, Labrança.
Tilled, Cultivado, Labrado, Arado.
a Tiller, Cultivador, Arador, Labrador.
a Tilling, Labrança.
a Till or until, Hásta.
a Till, or chest, Caxon.
a Tilt, Tienda.
to run a Tilt, Justar.
a Tilting, Juita.
Timber, Madera.
made with Timber, Maderado.
Timber Work, Enmaderamiento, Madera-
 miento.
to Timber, Enmaderar.
Timber'd, Enmaderado.
a Timbering, Enmaderamiento.
a Timbrel, Adufe.
a Timbrel Player, Aduféro.
to pass the Time, Passar el tiempo.
to serve the Time, Temponizar.
Time, Tiempo.
at that Time, A la sazón.
out of Time, Fuera de sazón.
the present Time, Al presente.
Time in Musick, Medida.
proper Time, Coyuntura.
in Time, A tiempo.
in process of Time, Con el tiempo.
from this Time forward, De aquí el ade-
 lante.
for this Time, Por ésta vez.
sometimes, Algunas vézes.
Timely, Oportuno.
Timely, Adv. Oportunamente.
Timorous, Pavoroso, Temeroso, Medroso.
Timorously, Medrosamente, Temerosamente,
 Pavorosamente.
the Timpany, Hidropesía.
Tinder, Yésca.
to Tingle, Retinir.
a Tingling, Retinte.
a Tinker, Remendón de calderas, Calderero.
to Tin or cover with tin, Estañar.
Tin, Estaño.
Tinn'd, Estañado.
Tinsel, Oropel.
Tinture, Teñidura.
a Tipe or Figure, Figura.
the Tip or Point of a thing, Púnta.
to Tip with Silver, &c. Ribetear.
Typ'd, Ribetado.
a Tistaff, Alguazil.
to Tittle or quaff, Bever mucho, Embo-
 racharse, Beborrotear.
a Tippling gossip, Bevedora.
to play the Tyrant, Tiranizar.
a Tyrant, Tirano.
Tirdles of Sheep, Cagarrútas de carnéro.
Tisan or Pisan, Tisana, Agua de cevada.
to Tire or weary, Enfadar, Cansar, Molér,
 Fatigar.
Tird, Enfadado, Confado, Molido, Fati-
 gada.
Tissow or Cloth of Gold, Tela de oro.
to Tish out or make away the tenth part,
 Dezmar.
Tithe, Diezmo.
Tithed, Diezmado.
a Tisher, Diezméro.
a Title, Título.
to Title, or entitle, Entitular.
Titled, Entitulado.
Tittle tattle, Parlería.

T O.

To, Para, A.
a Toad, çapo, Escuérço, Zapo.
Tobacco, Tabáco.
a Toadstool or Mushroom, Hongo.
a Toe, Dédó de pié.
Together, with much Help, De man có-
 mún.
Together, De man común, Juntos.

a Toy, Niñería, Bohonería, Bugería, Brinco.
 Totoy, Perder tiempo, Travesar.
 to Toil or labour, Trabajar.
 Toiling or travelling, Trabajando.
 Toiles, Nets or Hates, Tumbaderas, Redes, Lázos.
 a Token or sign, Señal.
 a privy Token between two, Contraleño.
 Told, Dicho.
 a Toll or Tax gatherer, Gavelero, Peajero, Portafuero.
 Toll, Alcabala, Peaje, Portazgo.
 a Toll-house, Fondaca, Aduana.
 to Toll or entice, Sonacar.
 to Tolerate, suffer and bear, Tolerar, Sufrir, Permitir.
 Tolerable, Tolerable.
 Tolerated, Tolerado, Sufrido, Permitido.
 a Tomb, Tumba, Sepúlchro, Túmulo.
 a Tomboy, Marimacho.
 a Tome, a part or one Volume of a Book, Tomo de Libro.
 a pair of Tonges, Tenazas.
 a Tongue, Lengua.
 barts Tongue, Lengua cervina.
 a fine Tongue'd Fellow, Zalamero.
 full of Tongue, Lenguaz.
 to be Tongue tied, Tener frenillo en la lengua.
 a Tool, Herramienta, Instrumento.
 a Tool with three Teeth, Arrexáque.
 a fore Tooth, Diente.
 a hind Tooth, Mucla.
 the Teeth that part the fore Teeth, and Grinders, Colmillos.
 a Tooth picker, Escarva-dientes, Fregadientes, Mondadientes.
 the Tooth ach, Mal de muclas.
 Toothed, Dentado.
 sharp Toothed, Dentón.
 great Toothed, Dentúdo.
 Teeth, Dientes.
 Teeth an edge, Dentera.
 thin Toothed, Emmelgado.
 to make Toothless, Desdentar.
 Toothless, Desdentado.
 Toothsome, Sabroso, Gustoso.
 to begin to have Teeth, Entendecer.
 to Top or strike off the top, Cortar el cabo, Descabezar.
 the Top on the Mast of a Ship, Gavia or Gavia.
 a Top where with Children play, Trompico, Trompo.
 a Top sail, Vela de Gavia.
 a Top-mast, Mastelero de Gavia.
 a Top gallant Mast or Sail, Juanete.
 the Top of a Hill, Altura, Cima.
 a Top of any thing, Cima, Cólmo, Encima, Cúmbre.
 to set on the Top, Encimar.
 from Top to bottom, De arriba abaxo.
 Topsy turvey, Lo de arriba abaxo.
 a Torch or taper, Acha, Antórcha, Cirio, Hacha.
 to Torment, vex or Grieve, Atormentar, Dar tormento.
 Torment, Tormento.
 Tormented, Atormentado.
 a Tormentor, Atormentador.
 Tormenting, Atormentando.
 Torn, Andrajoso, Despedegado, Destrogado, Rompido, Roto.
 a Tortoise, Tortuga.
 a Torrent, Raudal.
 the Torrid Zone, La Tórrida Zona.
 a Tortoise, Tortuga.
 Torture, Tormento.
 to Torture, Atormentar.
 Tortur'd, Atormentado.
 a Tossopot, Borracho, Bevedor.
 to Toss a Pike, Jugár de Pica.
 Toss'd, Arrojado.
 Tossing, Arrojando.
 to Toste, Tostar.
 a Tost, Tostada.
 Tosted, Tostado.
 a Tosting Iron, Tostador de hierro.
 to Toss or draw out, Ellirar.

Total, or whole, Total, Todo.
 Totally, Totalmente.
 to Totter, Vacilar.
 to Touch, Tocár.
 Touch'd, Tocado.
 a Touch, Tocamiento.
 a Touchstone, Piedra de toque.
 to touch with a Touchstone, Quilatar, Ponér al toque.
 touch'd with a Touchstone, Quilatado, Puesto al toque.
 the touch of a Touchstone, Quilate.
 Touch powder, Polvorin.
 the Touch-pan of a Piece, Cazoleta.
 the Touch-hole, Fogón.
 a Touch-box for a Piece, Frasquillo.
 Toughness, Duréza, Tieséza.
 Toughly, Tiesamente.
 Tough, Tieso.
 a Tourneament on Horseback, Tornéo, Jüsta.
 Tow, Estopa.
 belonging to Tow, Estopéno.
 to Tow a Vessel, Remolcar, Llevar a tós, or a remolque.
 Tow'd, Llevado a tós, or a remolque.
 Towage, Remolque, Tón.
 Towardness, Buena Disposición.
 Towards, Házia.
 a Towel, Açaléja, Azaléja, Toaja, Toalla.
 a Tower, Torre.
 to make Towers, Torreár.
 a watch-tower, Ataký.
 a Tower or turret, Tónc.
 a Town, Pueblo, Villa.
 a Towns-man, Vezino del pueblo.
 a Town-house, Casa de Villa.
 to Towze, or pull, Cardar.
 Towz'd, Cardado.

T R.

to Trace, Seguir por la huella.
 a Trace, Huella.
 Trac'd, Seguido por la huella.
 a Tracer, El que sigue por la huella.
 Tracing, Siguiendo por la huella.
 to Tract or prolong the time, Dilatar el tiempo, Diferir, Prolongar, Alongar.
 the Tract of a Cart-wheel made in the ground, Rodada.
 to make Tractable, Hazer tratable.
 Tractable, Tratable.
 a Trade, Oficio, Tráto.
 to Trade, Tratar, Contratar.
 a Trader, Tratante.
 a Tradesman, Oficial.
 Tradition, Tradición.
 to Traffick, Trafagar, Tratar, Contratar.
 Traffick, Tráfago, Tráto, Contrato.
 a Tragedy, Tragédia.
 to act a Tragedy, Representar.
 Tragical, Trágico.
 Tragically, Tragicamente.
 a Tray, Artéja.
 a Train, Seguito, gran Casa.
 to Train up, instruct, or bring up, Enseñar, Criar.
 Train'd up, Enseñado, Criado.
 a Traitor, Aléve, Tridor, Alevofo, Desleal.
 Traiterous, Traidór, Aléve.
 Traiterously, Traydóramente, Alevofoamente.
 to Trample, or to tread, Patear, Pisar, Hollar, Pisotear.
 Trampled under foot, Pateado, Pisado, Hollado, Pisoteado.
 Tranquillity, Tranquilidad, Sonégo, Quietud.
 to Transcribe, or Copy out of one thing into another, Tradadar, Copiar.
 to Transfer, or convey, Transferir.
 Transferr'd, Transferido.
 the feast of the Transfiguration, La Transfiguración.
 to Transfigure, Transfigurar, Transformar.

to Transform, Transfigurar, Transformar.
 Transform'd, Transformado, Transfigurado.
 to Transgress, Quebrar el mandamiento, Transgredir, Pecar.
 Transgress'd, Quebrantado, Pecado.
 a Transgression, Pecado.
 Transitory, Transitorio.
 to Translate, Traduzir, Tradadar.
 Translated, Traduzido, Tradadado.
 a Translator, Traduzidor, Tradadador.
 a Translation, Traducción.
 a Transmigration, Transmigración.
 to Transmigrate, Traspasar.
 Transmitted, Traspasado.
 Transmutation, Transmutación.
 a Transome, or beam going cross an house, Cabrio.
 Transparent, or that may be seen through, Diáfano, Transparente.
 to Transplant, Trasponer, Trasplantar.
 Transplanted, Traspuerto, Trasplantado.
 to Transport, carry, or convey away, Tragar, Transportar.
 Transported, Traspuerto, Transportado, Removido.
 a Transporter, Transportador, Traspuerdor.
 Transportation, Transportamiento.
 to Transport or set in another Place, Mudar, Trasponer.
 to Trap a Horse with trappings, Enjaezar el Cavallo.
 Trapp'd, Enjaezado.
 Trappings for a Horse, Anéja, Jézas, Puntamentos.
 to Trap or take in a trap, Coger en trampo, or Lazo.
 a Trap-stick, Paletilla, Paléta.
 a Trap, snare, or gin, Trampa, Lazo.
 a Trap-door, Trampa.
 to Travel, or take pains in any matter, Travajar.
 Travell'd, Trabajado.
 to Travel or labour, Afanar.
 Travel, labour, Trabajo, Afán.
 to Travail, or go on a Journey, Caminar, Hazer camino.
 Travel or Weariness, Afan.
 a Traveller, Caminante.
 to be in Travel, or Labour, Estar de par-to.
 to Traverse, Atravesar.
 to be in a Trance, Desmayarse, Pasmarse, Estar en un Parasismo.
 a Trance, Parasismo, Pismo.
 to act Treachery, Hazer traicion, or Alevosia.
 Treachery, Trayción, Alevosia.
 Treacherous, Traydor, Aléve, Alevofo.
 Treacherously, Alevofoamente.
 Treacle, Atriaca, Triaca.
 a Treacle-maker, Triaqueiro.
 Treason, Alevosia, Trayción.
 to Tread, stamp, or trample under foot, Atropellar, Calcar, Hollar, Pisar, Pisotear, Patear.
 to Tread as a Cock doth, Tomar el gallo la Gallina.
 Trodden under feet, Hollado, Pisado, Atropellado, Calcado.
 Trodden as a path, Afendrado, Afendrado.
 Treading on, Holladura, Calcamiento, Pisadura, Atropelladura.
 Treasure, Tesoro.
 to gather Treasure, Ateforar, Enteforar.
 a Treasury, Tesoreria.
 a little Treasure, Telorillo.
 a Treasure-house, Erario.
 a Treasurer, Tesorero.
 to Treat, Tratar.
 Treated, Tratado.
 a Treatise, Tratado.
 Treatably, Claro y distinto.
 a Treaty, or Covenant, Concato, Trato, Convenencia.
 Treble, Tredoble.
 a Treble, El triple.
 a Trece, El trece.

a little Tree, Arbolillo.
a saddle-Tree, Fúste de silla.
Trefoil, Trébol.
to Tremble or shake, Estremecer, Temblar, Tremér.
a Tumbler, Tembladór.
Trembling, Tembladúra, Estremecimien to.
to Trench about, Atrincherár.
Trench'd, Atrincherádo.
a Trench, Trinchéa, Cáva, Trinchéra.
a Trencher, Tajadór, Tablilla, Platillo.
to Trespass or offend, Ofendér.
a Trespass or Offence, Delito, Ofensa.
a Trestle, or three footed stool, Ataisór, Tripiés.
a Trevet, Trévede.
Trewant or truant, Estudiante negligente y floxo.
a Trial, Esperiencia, Pruéva.
to put upon Trial, Hazér pruéva.
put upon Trial, Provádo.
a Triangle, Triángulo.
Triangular, Cosa de tres esquinas, Triangulár.
a Tribe, Generación, Tribu.
Tribulation, Tribulación.
a Tribune, Tribuno.
a Tribunal or Judgment seat, Tribunal, Estádo.
a Tribute, Portazgo, Portágo, Tributo, Pécho, Alcabala.
a Tributegatherer, Portasguéro, Portazguéro, Alcabaléro.
Tributary, Tributario.
in a Trice, En un momento, En un tris.
a Trick, Tiro, Búrla, Piéza.
to play one a Trick, Hazér a uno una piéza.
to Trickle down, Goteár, Escurrir.
to Trick or trim, Afeitár.
to Trice, Experimentár, Provár.
Tried, Experimentádo, Provádo.
Trying, Probádo, experimentádo.
to Trice, or fine from Dregs, Aclarár, Adobár, Refinár.
Tried or fin'd, Refinádo, Aclarádo.
to Trifle, or toy, Necear.
Trifling business, Aféres.
Trifles or toys, Juguétes, Bugerías.
to Trim, trick, or dress up, Acicalár, Esmerár, Ornar, Aderezár.
Trim, Apuétto, Esmerádo.
Trimly, Apuéstamente, Puldaménte.
Trimnels, Pulidéz.
Trimmi'd, Acicaládo, Esmerádo.
Trimming, Acicaladúra.
the Blessed Trinity, La Trinidad.
a Tripe, Tripa.
a Tripe Market, Tripería.
Tripe, or threefold, Tresdobládo.
to make Tripe, Tresdoblar.
a Triple mace, Tridénte.
Triple jaw'd, Trifuéce.
to Trip, or stumble, Tropéar.
to Trip, Armar gancadilla.
Tripping, Gancadilla.
a Trevet, or trevet, Trébede, or Trévede.
Troial, De poco momento.
Triennially, Baxaménte.
to Triumph, Triumfár.
a Triumpher, Triumfadór.
Triumphing, Triumfánte.
Triumphantly, Triumfáteménte.
Trodden, Pisádo.
a Troop, Trópa.
to Troop, Andar en tropas.
a Trophæy, Trófeo.
a Tropick, Trópico.
to Trot or shake as a Horse does, Trotár.
Trotting, Tróte.
to Trouble, molest, disturb, or disquiet, Atribulár, Conturbár, Comovér, Congozar, Perturbár, Turbár, Molestar, Inquietár.
Troublesome noise, Estuendo.
Troubles, Congozo, Empácho, Perturbación, Turbación, Molestia, Inquietud.
Troubled, Atribulado, Conturbádo, Co-

movido, Enfastidiádo, Perturbádo, Turbádo, Molestádo, Inquietádo.
Troubled with Obstructions, Opiládo.
Troublesome, Congoxoso, Reboltoso, Turbulento, Túrbio, Inquieto, Molésto.
Troublesomely, Congoxosamente, Turbadamente, Inquietamente, Molestamente.
a Trough or bin to keep Corn in, Panera, Silo.
a watering Trough, Bevedéro.
a Trough, such as Horses drink in, or bogs feed in, Dornájo.
a Troop or Multitude of Men together, Caterva, Trópa.
a Troop or Company of Soldiers, Esquadron, Trópa.
a Trout, Trúcha.
to kill with a Trout spear, Fisgar.
a Trout spear, Arrexaque, Físiga.
to play the Truant, Estár holgádo, Desperdiciár Tiempo.
a Truce, Trégua.
to Truck, Abaratár, Trocár.
Truck'd, Trocádo.
a Truck, Trocadór.
a Truckle wherein the Roap runs, Garrucha, Carrillo, Poléa.
True, Verdadero.
Truely, Verdaderamente.
Truth, Verdád.
to speak Truth, Dezir verdád.
Trumpery, or old Baggage, Cosas viejas y quebradas, Tráitos viejos, Cachibaches.
to sound a Trumpet, Tocár trompéta, Trompeteár.
a Trumpet, Trompéta, Clarín, Trómpa.
a Trumpeter, Trompetéro.
a Truncheon, Bastón.
to Trundle, Rodár.
Trundled, Rodádo.
the Trunk of a Tree, Tronco de Arbol.
Trunk to shoot in, Zebratána.
to Truss or tie up, Arremangár, Sobacár, Enfaldár.
to Truss up under the Arm, Abarcár, Sobacár.
Truss'd, Arremangádo, Sobacádo.
Trussing, Arremango.
to Trust or have sure Confidence, Confiár, Fiár, Dár crédito.
Trust or Confidence, Confiánça, Esperánça, Crédito, Fe.
Trusted, Confiádo.
Trusty, Fiél, Leal.
a Trusting, Confiánça.
Trustiness, Fieldád, Confiánça.
Trustily, Seguraménte, Fielménte, Lealménte.
Truth, Verdád.
in Truth, De Verdád.
to Try, vid. *Tric*.

T U.

a Tub, Cúba, Cúbo.
a little Tub, Cubillo.
a Tub to receive Wine from the Prejs, Cúba devendimia.
a Tub wherein they knead Dough, Amasadera, Artésa.
a Tuck, or garber in a Gown or other garment, Alfórza de vestido.
Tuck'd or truss'd under the Arm, Abarcádo, Sobacádo.
to Tuck or truss up, Arremangár, Tomár Alfórza.
Tuck'd up, Arremangádo, Arregaçádo, Tomádo en Alfórza.
Tucking up, Arremangamién to, Arregaçamién to.
Tuesday, Mártes.
a Tuft, Bórta.
to Tuft, Borlar.
Tufted, Borlado.
to Tug, or pull, Tirár, or Pujár.
Tugg'd or pull'd, Tirádo, Pujádo.
Tugging, or pulling, Pujádo, Tirádo.
Tuition, or safe keeping, Tutela, Guárda.

a Tulip, Tulipán.
to Tumble, or vault, Bolteár, or Boltejár, Rebolcár, Tumbár.
to Tumble down dangerously, Abarrancár, Dár grán cayda despenárse.
Tumbled, Rebolcádo, Buélto, Caydo, Bolcádo.
a Tumbler, Bolteadór, Trepadór.
Tumbling, or Vaulting, Bolteadúra, Buélco, Trepadúra.
a Tumbril or Dung Cart, Carro, Chirion.
a Tumor, Hinchazón.
to make or raise a Tumult, Bolliciár, Alborotár, Amotinár.
a Tumult, stir, or hurley burley, Alboroto, or Barahúnda, Bolicio, Bulicio, Tumulto.
stir'd in Tumult, Alborotádo, Amotinádo.
Tumultuous, Bolicióso, Bulicióso.
Tumultuously, Alborotadaménte, Buliciosamente, Amotinadaménte.
Tunable, En Tóno.
to Tune, Tunóble, Entonar, Templár.
to be out of Tune, Desentonár.
out of Tune, Desentonádo.
a Tune, Tóno.
Tun'd, Entonádo, Templádo.
Tuning, Entonamién to, Templamién to.
a Tun, Tonel, Toneláda.
to Tun or pour Wine into Vessels, Ponér vino en barriles, Enbarrilár.
a Fish call'd a Tunny, Atún.
a Seller of Tunnies, Atunéro.
a Tunnel, Embúdo.
the Tunnel of a Chimney, Huméro, Cañón de Chimenéa.
a Turbar, Rodavállo.
Turbulent, Bullicióso, Inquieto.
Turbulently, Bullicosamente, Inquietamente.
a Turd, Miérda.
a Turf, or Clod of Earth, Cespéd.
a Turk, Túrcu.
a Turkey or Guinea-cock or Hen, Gallipáva, Gallipávo, Pávo.
a Turmoil, Barahúnda, Alboroto, Confusión.
to Turn, Convertir, Tornár, Bolvér, Rebolvér.
to Turn round, Remolinár.
Turn'd, Convertido, Buélto, Tornádo, Rebuélto.
a Turn coat, Tornadizo.
to Turn upside down, Trastornár, Bolvér lo de Arriba abáxo.
Turns, or course, Véz, Suerte.
a good Turn, Bienhécho, Mercéd.
an ill or shrewd Turn, Malhécho, Desseruicio.
to Turn and wind like a Snake, Entorcér, Entortijár.
to Turn as Turners do, Torneár.
to Turn the inside out, Enveñár, Bolvér lo de dentro a fuéra.
Turn'd, Buélto.
Turn'd aside, Divertido.
Turning aside, Diversión.
a Turner, Tornéro, Torneadór.
Turnable, Bolvible.
to Turn back, Bolvér atrás.
a Turning, Bolvimién to.
to Turn, Birár, Bolvér.
to Turn his Back, Bolvér las espaldas, Ausentárse, Huír.
a Turnament or joust, Tornéo.
a Turn broach, Tornadór de assádóres.
Turpentine, Termentina, Trementina.
a Turnep, Nabo.
a long slender Turnep, Nabíça.
a place where Turneps grow, Nabál.
a Turret, or Tower, Torrecilla.
a Turret on a Wall, Albarrana.
a Turtle dove, Tórtola.
a Tusk, Colmillo.
Tutelar, Tutelar.
Tutelary, Tutelarménte.
a Tutor, Ayo, Curadór, Governadór, Tutor.

a Tutress, Governadora, Aya, Curadora, Tutora.
a Tutorship, Tutela, Curaduría.
a Tutty, Atutía.

T W.

Twain, Dos.
a Twang, Refabio.
to Twang like the String of an Instrument, Aornar como cuerda de Instrumento.
Twelve, Doze.
Twelve years old, Dozenal.
Twenty, Véynte.
the Twentieth, Veinteno, Vigésimo.
Twice, Dos vézes.
to Twifallow land, Barvechar vinando, or binando.
a young Twig or osier, Vérgea, Varilla, Vímbré, Mímbré.
Twigs lim'd, Vérgas Enligadas.
a vine Twig, Sarmiento.
Twilight, either in the Evening or Morning, Bislúmbre, or Vislúmbre, Entrelubricano, Crepusculo.
Twilight in the Morning, Aíva, Madrugada, Auróra.
a Twin, Mellizo.
to Twinkle with the Eye, Quiniar, Mecér el ojo, Parpadear.
the Twinkling of an Eye, Moménto, Un cerrar y abrir de ojos.
to Twinkle, Relámpaguzeár.
Twice, Dos vézes.
to Twine about, Abraçar, Rebolvérfse, Entortijárfse.
Twin'd, Rebuélto, Abrazado, Entortijado.
to Twist, Torçér.
Twisted, Torçido.
to Twit or upbraid, Dár en cara.
Two, Dós.
of Two years, Dos añál.
Two hundred, Doziéntos.
Two fold, Duplíce, Dóble.
a Type, Simbloo.
Tyrant, Tícano.
Tythe, vid. *Tithe*.

V.

*to be V*acant or empty, Vacár, Estár de vázio.
a Vocation, Vocación.
Vacant, Vacánte.
Vacancy, Vacación.
a Vagabond, Vagamúndo.
to play the Vagabond, Vagamundeár.
a Vail, Antifaz, Manto.
a Vail for the head, Vélo.
to Vail, Tapárfse.
Vail'd, Tapado.
Vailes, Útiles.
Vain, Váno.
Vainly or in vain, En bálde, En vano, Sin propósito.
a Vain or weathercock, Veléta.
Vainglory, Vanagloria.
Vainglorious, Vanaglorioso.
to do a thing in Vain, Hazér algo en vano, or de bálde.
Vanity, Vanidad.
Vainly, Vanamente.
the Vallance of a bed, Cenéfa.
Valiant, Eróyco, Heróico, Valiente, Esforçado, Fuérte, Magnánimo, Valeroso.
to adventure Valiantly, Esponérse Valerosamente.
Valiantness, Esfuérço.
Valiantly, Fuertemente, Valientemente, Esforçadamente.
Valid, Valido.
Validy, Validamente.
a Valley, Vállé.
Valor, Valór, Esfuérço, Animofidad, Animo.
Valorous, Valeroso, Esforçado, Animoso, Valiente.
Valorously, Valerosamente, Esforçadamente, Valientemente.

to Value or prize, Apreciár, Estimar, A- valiar, Tener en mucho.
Value, Aprécio, Estí na, Valór.
Valu'd, Apreciado, Avaliado, Estimado Tenido en mucho.
a Valuer, Apreciador, Avaliador.
of Value alike, Equivalencia.
of no Value, Que no vale náda, De ningún valor, Despreciable.
to Vanish, Desaparecér, Desvanecér.
Vanish'd, Desvanecido, Desaparecido.
Vanishing, Desvanecimiento, Desaparecimiento.
Vanity, Vanidad.
to Van, or fan, Abtentár, Alimpiár.
the Van of an Army, Vanguardia.
to Vanquish or overcome, Conquistár, A- quistár, Ganár, Vencér.
a Vanquisher, Conquistador, Vencedor, Sugetador.
Vanquish'd, Conquistado, Vencido, Suje- tado.
a Vantage or Overplus, Ventaja.
to get Vantage, Tomár ventaja.
a Vapor, Vapor.
to send out Vapours, Vaporeár, Exhalár.
to Vary or be at variance, Desconvenír, Desconcertár, Enojar.
Variable, Variable.
Variety, Variedad.
a Varlet or slave, Un Perdido, Un mise- rable, Un Picaron.
Varnish, Varníz.
to Varnish, Envarnizar.
Varnish'd, Envarnizado.
a Varnisher, Envarnizador.
a Vassal, Vassallo.
made a Vassal, Avassallado.
Vassallage, Vassallaje.
a Vast, Grandioso.
to Vault or make hollow, Bovedár, Above- dár, Arqueár.
a Vault, Arco de bóveda, Bobéda, or Bó- veda.
a little Vault, Bovedilla.
a Vaulter or tumbler, Bolteador or Bol- tejador.
to Vault on a Horse, Bolteár or Boltejar.
Vaulting, Bolteando, Boltejeando.
to Vaunt, boast or brag, Alabárfse, Jatár, Desgarrár.
Vaunting, Alabando, Jatando.
a Vaunter, Alabancioso, Jatancioso, Des- garrador.
the Vanguard, Avanguardia.

U B.

an Ubiquitary, Ubiquitário.
Ubiquity, Ubiquidad.

U D.

an Udder, U'bre.

V E.

Veal, Ternera.
to Veer out a Rope, Arriár.
Vegetable, Vegetable.
Vegetative, Vegetativo.
Vehement, Vehemente.
to be Vehement, Sér Vehemente.
Vehemency, Hemencia, Vehemencia, Im- petu.
Vehemently, Con vehemencia.
a Vein, Vena.
a Vein of Metal, Venéro.
Vellam, Pergamino.
Veldevere a Bird so call'd, Corçál, Zorzál.
Velvet, Terciopelo.
Velvet unshorn or shag, Fétpa.
Vendible, or which may be sold, Vendible, Que se puede vender.
Vendiblely, Vendiblemente.
Venerable, Venerable.
Venerably, Venerablemente.
Veneration, Veneración.
Venerual, Venéreo.
given to Venerly, Luxurioso.

to Venge or revenge, Vengar.
Vengeance, Vengança.
Venial, Venial.
Venially, Venialmente.
a Veng at fence, Levada.
Venison, Venado.
young Venison, Corcillo.
Venome, Veneno.
to Venome, Emponçonár.
Venomid, Emponçonado.
Venomous, Ponconoso.
Venomously, Ponconosamente.
to Vent or wind as a Spaniel does, Ra- streár, Sacár por el rálto.
to Venture, hazard or adventure, Aven- turár, Ariscár.
a Verdict, Senténcia.
green Verdigrace, Cardenillo, Verderá- me.
a Verger of a Church, Pertiguéro de Y- glésia, Cetiéro.
a pair of Virginals, Clavicórdios.
Very, Muy.
to Verify or prove a thing, Averiguár, Ve- rificar, Probár.
Verify'd, Averiguado.
Verifying a thing to be so, Averiguación.
Verily, Alcé, En Verdád.
Verity or Truth, Verdád.
Verjuice, Agrás.
a Verlet or varlet, Endiablado.
Vermilion, Bermellón, Vermellón, Mi- nio.
Vernish, Barníz, or Berníz.
Vernishing, Embarnizadura.
Vernish'd, Barnizado.
to Vernish, Barnizar, Embarnizar, or En- varnizar.
to Versify or make Verses, Hazér versos, Verficár.
a staff of Verses, Cópla.
a Versifier, Poéta.
a Verse, Vérso.
Vertical, Vertical.
Vertue, Virtúd.
Vertuous, Virtuoso.
Vertuously, Virtuosamente.
Vervein, Verbena.
Very, Muý.
a Vessel, Vasija, Váso.
Vessels of Earth, Loça, Barro.
to put into Vessels, Enbasar, Envasar, Po- nér en vasijas.
a little Vessel, Vasillo.
to Vest, Vestir.
Vested, Vestido.
a Vestment, vesture or garment, Vesti- miento, Vestido.
a Vestry, Vistuario, Sacristía.
a Vetch that grows among Corn, Alburja, or Alberjina.
to Vex, trouble or torment, Enojar, A- passionár, Apesarár, Atribulár, Afamar, Amohinar.
a Vexation, Vexación, Moléstia.
Vex'd, Atribulado, Apasionado, Ape- rado, Amohinado, Enojado.
a Vexer, Moléstador, Amohinador, Eno- jador.

U G.

Ugly, horrible or hideous, Espantoso, Espantable, Prodigioso, Fco, De mala catadura.
Ugliness, Fealdad.

V I.

a Vial to play on, Vibuela.
a Vial de Gamba, Vibuela de arco.
a Vial or little Glass, Ampolléta, Ampól- la, Redóma.
a Vicar, Vicario.
a Vicarage, Vicaria.
Vice, Vicio.
a Vice, such as smiths use, Bigornia, or Vigornia.
a Vice or spindle in the Press, Tor- nillo.

to become *Vicious*, Aviciarse.
 made *Vicious*, Aviciado.
Vicious, Vicioso.
Viciously, Viciosamente.
 a *Vice-Admiral*, Almirante. The Spaniards call the *Admiral*, General.
 the *Vice-admiral's ship*, Almiranta.
 a *Vice-roy*, Virrey, Visorrey.
 a *Vice-count*, Vizconde.
 a *Vice-gerent*, Teniente.
 to *Viciate* or *deflower*, Desflorar, Desvirgar, Estrupar, Corromper.
Vicinity, Vecindad.
 a *Victory*, Victoria.
Victorious, Victorioso.
Victoriously, Victoriosamente.
 to *Victual* or *furnish with victuals*, Avituallar, Prover.
 to *sell Victuals*, Vender de comer, Vender vituallas.
Victual'd, Avituallado.
 a *Victualer*, Vituallero, Vivandero, Bi-vandero.
Victuals, Bitualla, Vianda, Vituallas, Provision, Comida.
 a *Victualling-house*, Hosteleria.
 to *Vue* as a carder, Embidar.
Vueing at game, Embite.
 by *Vueing* or *striving*, A porfia.
 a *Vue*, Contienda.
 to *Vue*, behold or consider, Considerar, Mirar, Ojea.
 a *Vue*, Vista.
 a *Vigil*, Vigilia.
Vigilancy, Vigilancia.
 to be *Vigilant*, Estar Alerta.
Vigilant, Vigilante.
Vigilantly, Con vigilancia.
Vigor, Vigor.
Vigorous, Vigoroso.
Vigorously, Vigorosamente.
Vile, Vil.
 to be *Vile*, Ser vil, Bixo, or Ruyn.
 to make *Vile*, Aviltar.
Vileness, Viléza.
Vilely esteem'd, Apocado.
Vilely, Abiltadamente, Vilmente.
 a *Village* or *country town*, Aldéa, Pueblo pequeño.
Villany, Villanía, Vellaquería, Ruynad, Picardia.
Villanously, Villanamente, Infamemente, Ruynmente.
 a *Villain*, Villano, Ruyn.
 to grow *Vile*, Envilecer.
 made *Vile*, Envilecido.
 a *Vine branch*, Cepa.
 a little *Vine branch*, Cepilla.
 a *Vine*, vid.
 a *Vine that runs up a Wall*, Párra.
 a *Vineyard*, Viña.
 to cut leaves from a *Vine*, Despampañar.
 cutting of leaves from *Vines*, Despampañadura.
Vinegar, Vinagre.
 a *Vinegar bottle*, Vinagrero.
 made sharp with *Vinegar*, Avinagrado.
 a *Vintage*, Vendimia.
 a *Vintner*, Tavernero.
 a *Vinyard*, Viña, Vinedo.
 a *Vinyard keeper*, Vinadero.
 to *Violate* or *break*, Violar, Quebrantar, Romper, Traspasar.
Violated, Violado, Quebrantado, Traspasado.
Violating of women, Estrupo.
 a *Violator*, Violador.
 to play on a *Viol*, Tañer vihuela.
 a *Viol* to play on, Vihuela.
 a *Viol de Gamba*, Vihuela de arco.
 a *Violet-plast*, Redoma.
 to take by *Violence*, Tomar por fuerza, or Quitar por fuerza.
Violence, Fuerza, Impetu, Violencia, Ultraje.
Violent, Violento.
Violently, Forzosamente, Impetuosamente.
 white *Violets*, or the flower de luce, Al-

helí, or Alhaylí.
 a *Violet*, Violeta.
 a *Virago*, Mugér varónil, Marimacho.
 a *Viper*, Bicha, Bivora.
 a young *Viper*, Bivorczno.
Virginals, Clavicordio.
 a *Virgin*, Virgen, Donzella.
Virginity, Virgindad.
Virginitie, Como Virgen, como donzella.
 a *Visage*, Cara, Visage, Rostro.
 a *Visard*, Máscara, Carátula, Carantón.
Viscosity, Viscosidad.
Viscous, Viscoso.
Visible, Visible.
Visibly, Visiblemente.
 a *Vision*, Vision.
 a *Visit*, Visitar.
 a *Visit*, Visita.
 a *Visitor*, Visitador, or Visitadora.
Vital, Vital.
 to *Vitiate*, Corromper.
Vitiated, Corrompido.
Vitriol, Vitriolo.
Vivacity, Vivéza.

U L

an *Ulcer*, Llaga.
Ulcerated, Ulcerado.

U M

the *Umbrage* or *shadow of Woods and Trees*, Sombra.
Umbrage, or *Jealousy*, Recelo.
 to take *Umbrage*, Recelarse.
 that has taken *Umbrage*, Receloso.
 an *Umpire* or *arbiter*, Apaziguador, Arbitro.

U N

Unable, Inábil, Insuficiente.
 to make *Unable*, Inabilitar.
Unableness, Inabilidad, Insuficiencia.
Unably, Inhabilmente, Insuficientemente.
Unacceptable, Ingrato.
Unaccessible, Inaccesible.
Unaccustom'd, Desusado, Desacostumbrado.
Unacquainted, Desconocido.
Unadvise'd, Mal avisado, Inconsiderado, Temerario.
 to do any thing *Unadvisedly*, Desatentar, No tener consideración.
Unadvisedness, Inconsideración.
Unadvisedly, Atroche y moche, Desatentamente.
Unallow'd, No permitido.
Unalterable, Inmutáble.
Unanimity, Unanimidad.
Unanimous, Unánime.
Unapproachable, Inaccesible.
Unapt, Inábil.
 to make *Unapt*, Inabilitar.
Unapness, Inabilidad.
 to *Unarm*, Desarmar.
Unarm'd, Desarmado.
Unarming, Desarmadura.
Unavoidable, Inevitable.
Unavoidably, Inevitablemente.
Unawares, Improviso, Repentino, de Repente.
Unassuage'd, No apaziguado.
Unawak'd, Dormido.
 to *Unbar*, Desbarrar.
Unbegotten, No engendrado.
Unbelief, Incredulidad.
 to *Unbend* a bow, Desempulgar el arco.
Unbending, Desempulgadura.
Unbent, Desempulgado.
 to *Unbennum*, Desentumecer.
Unbennum'd, Desentumecido.
Unbecoming, Indecente.
 to *Unbewitch*, Deshechizar, Desenbrujar.
Unbewitch'd, Deshechizado, Desenbrujado.
Unbidden, No mandado, No Combidado.
 to *Unbind* books, Desenquadrar li-

to *Unbind*, Desatar, Desligar, Desanudar, Soltar.
Unbinding, Desatando, Desligando, Desanudando.
Unbound, Desatado, Desanudado, Desligado, Soltado.
Unbloudy, Sin sangre.
Unboil'd, Crudo.
 to *Unbolt*, Descerrajar.
Unbought, Por comprar, No comprado.
Unborn, Por nacer, No nacido.
 to *Unbridle*, Desenfrenar, Quitar el freno.
Unbridled, Desenfrenado, Quitado el freno.
Unbridling, Desenfrenamiento.
Unbroken, Entero, no Quebrado, Sano.
 to *Unbuckle*, Deshebillar.
Unbuilt, Por edificar, No edificado.
Unbung'd, Destapado.
 to *Unburden*, Descargar.
Unburden'd, Descargado.
Unbury'd, Por enterrar, No enterrado.
Unburn'd, Por quemar, No quemado.
 to *Unbutton*, Desabotonar.
Unbutton'd, Desabotonado.
Unbuttoning, Desabotonadura.
Uncapable, Incapaz.
Uncapablely, Incapazmente.
Uncapableness, Incapacidad.
 to *Uncase*, Desfundar, Descaxar.
Uncas'd, Desfundado, Descaxado.
Uncaught, Por tomar, No tomado, Por coger.
Uncertainty, Incertidumbre.
Uncertain, Incierto.
Uncertainly, Inciertamente, Sin certeza.
Unceasingly, Sin cesar.
 to *Unchain*, Descadenar.
Unchain'd, Descadenado.
Unchangeable, Inmutable, Sin mudanza, Invariable.
Unchangeably, Inmutablemente.
Unchast, Incontinente, Incasto, Impudico, Immodesto.
Unchastly, Impudicamente.
Unchipt, Por descortezar, No descortezado.
Uncircumspect, Inconsiderado, Inavísado, Temerario.
Uncivil, Mal criado, Descortés, Mal mirado.
 to *Unclass*, Desabrochar.
Unclass'd, Desabrochado.
Unclad, Desnudo.
 an *Uncle*, Tío.
 to be *Unclean*, Ser Súzio.
Unclean, Immundo, Súzio.
Uncleanness, Suziedad.
Uncleanly, Suziamente.
Uncleans'd, Súzio, No limpiado.
Uncleft, Entero, No hendido.
 to *Unclose*, Abrir, Descerrajar, Soltar.
 an *Unclosing* of that which was shut, Abertura, Descerradura.
 to *Uncloth*, Desnudar.
Unclothed, Desnudo.
Uncomeliness, Indecencia, Desaliño, Descompollura.
Uncomely, Desaliñado, Descompuesto, Indecente.
Uncommodiously, Desacomodadamente.
Uncomfortable, Desconsolado.
Uncomfortably, Desconsoladamente.
Unconceiveable, Incomprehensible.
Uncondemn'd, Por sentenciar, No sentenciado.
Unconsequently, No consecuente, Sin consecuencia.
Unconquer'd, Por vencer, No vencido, Invicto.
Unconstantly, Inconstantemente, Inciertamente.
Unconstancy, Inconstancia, Instabilidad, Mutabilidad.
Unconstant, Inconstante, Instable, Mudable, Vario, Incierto.

Unconsum'd Por gastar, No gastado, Por consumir, No consumido.
Unconvenient, No conveniente, Inconveniente.
Uncorrected, Por castigar, No castigado, Incoregido.
Uncorrupted, Entero, Incorrupto, Sin corrupción.
Uncorrupt, *idem*.
Uncorruptly, Incorruptamente.
Uncorruptible, Incorruptible.
to Uncover, Descubir, Desatapar, Descubrir, Destapar.
Uncover'd, Descubijado, Descubierito, Desatapado, Destapado.
to Uncouple, Desunir, Desunzir, Soltar, Apartar.
Uncoupled, Desunido, Desunzido, Apartado, Suélto.
an Uncoupler, Desunidor, Desunzidor, Apartador, Soltador.
Uncredible, Increyble.
Uncurteous, Descortés, Mal criado, Desapacible.
Uncurteously, Descortesmiente, Desapaciblemente, Sin criança.
Uncouth, Aspéro.
Uncunning, Sin sciencia, Sin artificio, Rúdo, Grossero.
Uncurable, Sin remedio, Incurable, Desahuziado.
Uncut, Por cortar, No cortado.
Undeck'd, Desadornado, Descompuesto, Desalñado.
to Undeck, Desadornar, Descomponer, Desalñar.
Undeild, Imaculado, No manchado, Sin mancha.
Under, Debáxo.
to Underlay, Poner debáxo.
Underlaying, Poniendo debáxo.
Underlaid, Puésto debáxo.
an Underling, Criadillo, Menor, Inferior.
to Undermine, Descimentar, Minar, Socavar.
Undermin'd, Descimentado, Minado, Socavado.
Underneath, Debájo.
to Underprop, Apoyar, Apuntalar, Soportar.
Underpropp'd, Apoyado, Apuntalado, Soportado.
Underforkers, Puntales, Estantes, Apoyos.
to Underfet, Apuntalar, Apoyar.
Underfet, Apuntalado, Apoyado, Soportado.
to Understand, Entender, Saber.
Understanding, Entendimiento, Intelligencia, Sabiduría.
belonging to Understanding, Intelectual.
Understood, Entendido, Sabido.
to Undertake, Encargarse, Empezar, Tomar a su cargo.
he that Undertakes for another, Abonador, Fiador.
Undertaken, Encargado, Tomado a su cargo, Empezado.
an Undertaker, Empezador.
Undertaking for another, Abonamiento, Fianza.
an Undertaking, Empresa, Encargo.
to Undervalue, Menospreciar.
Undervalue'd, Menospreciado.
Under Age, Menor de edad.
Undeserv'd, Indigno.
Undeserving, Indigno.
Undeservedly, Sin merecer, Sin merecimiento, Inmerito, No merecido, Inmeritadamente.
Undetermined, Por determinar, No determinado, Indeterminado.
Undigested, Indigesto.
Undiscreetness, Indiscreción.
Undiscreet, Imprudente, Indiscreto.
Undiscreetly, Imprudentemente, Indiscreitamente.
Undistain'd, Sin manchar, No manchado.

Undistinguishable, Indistincto.
Undistinctly, Indistintamente.
to Undoe Deshacer.
Undoing, Deshazimiento.
Undone, Deshecho.
Undevout, Indevoto.
Undevoutly, Indevotamente.
Undoubtedly, Sin duda.
Undoubtedly, Indubitavelmente.
Undry'd, Mojado, No Enxuto.
Uneasiness, Inquietud.
Uneasy, Inquieto.
Uneasily, Inquietamente.
Unequal, Desigual, Impar.
to make Unequal, Desigualar.
Unequality, Disparidad, Desigualdad.
Unequally, Desigualmente.
Unequally, Desigualmente.
Unequally, Desigualmente.
Uneven, Desiguál, Desempar.
to make Uneven, Desemparejar, Desigualar, Descompadrar.
Unevenness, Desparajo, Desigualdad, Descompadradura.
Unevenly, Desigualmente.
Unevitable, Inevitable.
Unexcusable, Sin excusa, Inexcusable, Sin disculpa.
Unexpected, Inesperado.
Unexpectedly, Inesperadamente.
Unexpert, Inexperto.
Unexpertly, Nejamiente, Sin experiencia, Inexpertamente.
Unexpressible, Inexplicable.
Unexpressibly, Inexplicablemente.
Unextinguishable, Inextincto.
Unfaithfulness, Deslealtad, Infidelidad, Falsedad.
Unfaithful, Infiel, Pérfido, Desleal, Falso, Traydor.
Unfaithfully, Perfidamente, Deslealmente, Falsamente.
Unfallible, Infalible, Sin falta ninguna, Que no puede fallar.
Unfallibly, Infaliblemente.
Unfashion'd, Sin Fayción.
to Unfasten, Despegar.
Unfastened, Desapegado.
to Unfeather, Desplumar.
Unfeather'd, Desplumado.
Unfed, Sin dar de comer, No sagiado.
Unfem'd, Verdadero, No fingido, Sincero, Real.
Unfensed, Sin defensa, Abierto.
to Unfetter, Quitar los grillos, Soltar, Desaprilonar.
Unfettered, Quitados los grillos, Desaprilonado.
Unfinished, Por acabar, No acabado, Imperfecto.
Unfitness, Inepecia, Incongruidad.
Unfit, Desconvenible, Inepto, Incongruo.
Unfitly, Sin conveniencia, Ineptamente, Incongruamente.
to Unfold, Desembolver, Descoger, Desplegar.
Unfolded, Descogido, Desplegado, Desembuelto.
Uniform'd, Infórme.
Unfortunate, Desdichado, Infeliz, mal logrado, malhadado, Infortunado, Infelice, Malaventurado, Desgraciado.
Unfortunately, Desdichadamente, Desgraciadamente.
Unfound, Por hallar, No hallado, Oculto, Escondido.
Unfruitful, or Barren, Sin fructo, Infertilero.
Unfurnish'd, Desproveído, Desorneado, Desguarnecido.
to Unfurnish, Desguarnecer, Desprover, Desornecer.
Ungrateful, Sin ganancia, sin logro, Desaprovechado.
Ungrace'd, Desadornado, Deformado, Desguarnecido.
to Ungarnish, Desguarnecer, Desadornar, Deformar.

Ungathered, Por coger, No cogido, Descogido.
Ungentle, Indómito.
Ungentleness, Fierza.
Ungently, Indomitamente.
Ungentel, Descortés, Desalñado.
Ungentleness, Descortesía, Desalño.
Ungentlely, Descortesmiente, Desalñadamente.
Ungilded, Desdorado.
to Ungild, Desdorar.
to Ungird, Desceñir.
Ungirded, Desceñido.
to Unglue, Desengrudar, Despegar.
Unglued, Desengrudado, Despegado.
Ungluing, Desengrudamiento.
Ungodliness, Maldad, Impiedad, Irreligión.
Ungodly, Impio, Malo.
Ungratefulness, Desagradecimiento, Ingratitud.
Ungrateful, Desagradecido.
Ungratefully, Desagradecidamente.
Ungratiousness, Vellaquería.
Ungratious, Malvado, Vellaco.
Ungratiously, Malvadamente, Vellacamente.
Unhability, Inabilidad.
a place Unhabited, Inabitado.
Unhabitable, Inabitable.
Unhallow'd, No santificado, Profano.
to Unhalter, Descabestrar.
Unhandfomness, Defatavio, Desalño, Descompoltura.
Unhandfomly, Defataviadamente, Desalñadamente, Descompuestamente.
Unhandfome, Defataviado, Inculto, Desalñado, Decompuésto, Fco.
Unhappiness, Infelicidad, Infortunio, Desgracia, Desdicha.
Unhappy, Infelice, Infortunado, Desgraciado, Desdichado.
Unhappily, Infelizmente, Desgraciadamente, Desdichadamente.
Unharmful, Inocente.
Unharness'd, Desadereçado.
to Unharp, Desabrochar.
Unharp'd, Desabrochado.
Unheal'd, Por sanar, No sano.
Unholfome, Infino.
Unhonest, Deshonesto.
Unhonestly, Deshonestamente.
to Unhorse, Derribar del Cavallo.
Unhurt, No dañado.
Unhusbanded, No labrado.
an Unicorn, Unicornio.
Uniformity, Conformidad.
to Unjoin, Desapegar.
Unjoin'd, Desapegado.
to Unjoin, Descoyuntar.
Unjoined, Descoyuntado.
Union, Unión.
to Unite, Unir.
United, Unido.
Unity, Unidad.
Universal, Universo, Universal, General.
Universally, Universalmente.
an University, Academia, Univerfidad.
a student of the University, Academico, Estudiante.
Unjustice, Injusticia, Sin razon, Iniquidad.
Unjust, Iniquo, Injusto.
Unjustly, Injustamente.
Unjudg'd, Por juzgar, No juzgado, No sentenciado.
Unkemb'd, Por peynar, No peynado.
Unkind, Desapacible, Desagradable.
Unkindly, Desagradablemente.
Unkindness, Desamor.
to Unkne, Desanudar.
Unkne, Desanudado.
Unknitting, Desanudadura.
Unknown, Incognito, No conocido, Desconocido.
Unknowing, Ignorante.
Unknowingly, Ignorantemente.

to Unlace, Desatar.
Unlawful, Ilicito.
Unlawfulness, Ilegalidad.
Unlawfully, Ilicitamente.
Unlearn'd, Sin letras, Indócto, Idiota, Ignorante.
Unleaven'd, Sin levadura.
Unless, Si no.
Unless that, Sino es que, Menos que.
Unlike, Deselejante.
to be Unlike, Deselejár.
Unlikely, Deselejantemente.
an unlikely thing, Cosa improbable.
Unlikely, Improbablemente.
Unlikelihoods, Improbabilidad.
Unlimited, No limitado.
to Unlock, Descerrajar.
Unlocked, Descerrajado.
to Unload, Descargar.
Unloaded, Descargado.
Unlook'd for, Improvísio.
Unloving, Desenamorado.
Unlucky, Infelice, Infortunado, Deschichado, Desventurado.
Unluckiness, Deldicha, Infortúnio, Desgracia, Desventura.
Unluckily, Infortunadamente, Desdichadamente, Desgraciadamente.
Unlucky or Arch, Traviésio.
Unluckily, Traviessamente.
Unluckiness, Travessura.
Unlusty, Entorpecido, Flóxo, Fláco.
Unlustiness, Entorpecimiento, Entorpecimiento, Flaqueza.
to grow Unlusty, Entorpecer, Flaquear.
to Unmail, Desmallar.
Unmail'd, Desmallado.
Unmailing, Desmalladura.
Unmade, Deshecho.
to Unmake, Deshazer.
to be Unmannerly, Descomedirse, Ser Descortés, or Descomedido.
Unmannerliness, Desacato, Descomedimiento, Descortésia.
Unmannerly, Descomedidamente, Desacatadamente, Desmedidamente, Descortésmente.
Unmanur'd, Por labrar, No labrado, Por estercolar.
Unmarry'd, Descasado, Soltéro.
to Unmarry, Descasar.
to Unmask, Descubrir, Quitar la Mascara.
Unmask'd, Descubierto.
to Unmatch, Descompadrar.
Unmatch'd, Descompadrado.
Unmeasurable, Demasiado, Desmesurado, Imenso, Imoderado.
to be Unmeasurable, Desmedirar.
Unmeet, Inconveniente.
Unmeetness, Inconveniencia.
Unmerciful, Desapiadado, Cruel.
Unmindful, Olvidado.
Unmingled, Sin mezcla.
Unmodesty or Immodesty, Immodestia, Desvergüenza.
Unmoderate, Imoderado, Excesivo.
Unmoheaten, Desapollillado.
Unmoveable, Inmovible, Imóvil.
to Unmole, Deshinicar, Desclavar.
Unmole'd, Deshinicado, Desclavado.
Unnatural, Inhumano.
Unnaturally, Inhumanamente.
Unnaturalness, Inhumanidad.
to Unmash, Detamidar.
Unmashed, Detamidado.
Unnoble, Baxo, Vil, Apocido, Cevil, De baxa ralea.
Unoccupy'd, Desocupado.
to leave Unoccupied, Desocupar.
Unorderly, Indecidamente, Sin orden, Desordenadamente.
Unpay'd, Por pagar, No pagado, Sin paga.
Unpainted, Por pintar, No pintado, Despintado.
Unpardonable, Imperdonable.
Unpatient, Impaciente.
Unpatiently, Impacientemente.
Unpartable, No partible.

to Unpeople, Despoblar.
Unpeopled, Despoblado.
Unperceivable, Imperceptible.
Unperform'd, Por cumplir.
Unperishable, Permanente.
Unperfect, Imperfecto.
to Unpin, Desenclavar, Desprender.
Unpin'd, Desenclavado, Desprendido.
Unpleasant, Desapazible, Disgustoso, Desagradable.
Unpleasant in taste, Disgustoso.
Unpleasantly, Desdonadamente, Disgustosamente, Desagradablemente.
Unplow'd, Por arar, Por labrar, No arado, No labrado.
Unpolish'd, No polido, Por pulir.
Unpossible, Imposible.
Unprepar'd, Desaparejado.
Unprofitable, Inútil, Sin provecho, Desaprovechado.
Unproper, Improprio.
Unprovided, Desproveído.
Unprovident, Sin providencia, Mal proveído, Mal mirado.
Unprosperous, Infelice, Desdichado, Desgraciado.
Unpunish'd, Impunido.
Unpure, Impuro.
Unquail'd, Sin temór, Sin miedo, Por sujetar.
Unquench'd, Por apagar.
Unquiet, Inquieto.
Unquietly, Inquietamente.
Unquietness, Inquietud.
Unread, Por leer, No leído.
Unready, Desaparejado.
Unreasonable, Sin razón.
Unrecoverable, Irrecuperable.
Unregarded, Desdeñado.
Unreverent, Mal criado, Desacatado, Irreverente.
Unreprov'd, Irreprensio.
Unreveng'd, Por vengar, No vengado, Sin vengança.
Unrewarded, Por satisfazer, No galar, donado.
Unrighteousness, Injusticia.
Unrighteous, Injusto, Sin justicia.
Unrighteously, Injustamente.
Unripeness, Por madurar, Verde, No maduro.
to Unroll, Desarrollar.
Unruly, Desentrenado.
to Unsaddle, Desensillar.
Unsaddled, Desensillado.
Unsalted, Por salar, No salado, Sin Sal, Fréscio.
Unsaileable, Innavegable.
to Unsay, Desdezir.
Unsaluted, Por Saludar, No saludado.
Unsatisfiable, Infaciáble.
Unsatiably, Infaciablemente.
Unsavory, Desabrido, Insípido, Sin gusto.
to Unseal, Abrir cartas Descellar.
Unseal'd, Abierto, Quitado el sello.
Unsearchable, Inescrutáble.
Unseasonable, Sin sazón.
Unseemely, Indecente.
Unseparable, Inseparable.
Unserviceable, Inútil.
Unserviceably, Inutilmente.
to Unsettle, Inquietar.
Unsettled, Inquieto.
to Unshackle, Desaprisionar.
Unshackled, Desaprisionado.
Unshakeable, Imóvil.
to Unshale, Descascarar.
Unshal'd, Descascarado.
Unshamefastness, Desvergüenza, Immodestia.
Unshamefast, Desvergonzado.
Unshapen, Mal tallado, Mal hecho, Diforme.
to Unship, Desembarcar.
to Unshoe, Descalzar.
Unshod, Descalzado.
Unskillfulness, Impericia.
Unskilful, Imperito.
Unskilfully, Imperitamente.

Unsodden, Crúdo, por cozer, no cozido.
to Unfold, Desfoldar.
to Unfow, Descosér.
Unfow'd, Descosido.
Unfowing, Descosidura.
Unspeakeable, Inefáble.
Unspent, Por gastar, No gastado.
Unspired, Sin odio.
Unspoken of, No hablado, No dicho, Por mentar.
Unspotted, Imaculado, Sin mancha.
Unstable, Incierto, Inconstante, Mudable, Vario.
Unstain'd, Imaculado, Sin mancha.
Unsteadfastness, Instabilidad, Inconstancia, Mutabilidad.
Unsteadfast, Instáble, Inconstante, Mudable.
Unsteadfastly, Inconstantemente, Instablemente.
to Unstop, Destapar.
Unstopp'd, Destapado.
Unstopping, Destapamiento.
Unstrung, Sin cuerdas.
Unstuffed, Vazio.
Unsubdu'd, Por sujetar.
Unsupportable, Incomportable, Insufrible, Intolerable.
Unsupportability, Insuficiencia.
Unsupportive, Insuficiente.
Unsurdred, Junto, No apartado, Inseparado.
Unsure, Incierto.
to Unswath, Desfaxar, Desfayar, [Desembolver.
Unsweet, Insuave.
Unsworn, Por jurar, No jurado.
Untaken, Por tomar, No tomado, Por prender.
Untam'd, Indómito.
an Untam'd beast, Cerril, No domado, Indómito.
Untameable, Indomable.
Untasted, Por probar, or por gustar, No provado, No gustado.
Untaught, Por enseñar.
Untemperate, Destemplado, Desordenado.
Untestate, Sin testar, Intestado.
to be Unthankful, Desagradecer, Ser desagradecido.
Unthankful, Desagradecido, Ingrato, Desconocido.
Unthankfulness, Desagradecimiento, Ingratitud.
Unthought of, No pensado, Impensado.
Unthriftiness, Prodigalidad.
an Unthrif, Pródigo.
Unthrifty, idem.
Unthrifly, Prodigamente.
to Untie, Desatar, Desligar.
Untied, Desligado, Desatado.
to Untile, Desladrillar, Destejar.
Unutil'd, Destejado.
Unutiling, Destejadura.
Until, A tanto, Hasta.
Unutil'd, Por arar, Por labrar, No arado, No labrado.
Untimely, Sin tiempo.
Unto, Al, A.
Untold, Por dezir, No dicho.
Untolerable, Intolerable.
Untouch'd, No tocado, Por tocar.
Untoward, Perverso, Traviésio, Desgobernado.
Untowardly, Apospelo, Perversamente, Traviessamente.
Untractable, Intractable.
Untractableness, Intractabilidad.
Untrimm'd, Por afeitar, No afeitado, Sin afeite.
Untrue, Falso.
Untruly, Falsamente.
Untruth, Mentira, Falsedad.
to Unruse a point, Soltar el aguja.
Unruly, Infiel.
Unusable, Inútil, Desacordado.
to Untwine, Desmarañar.
Untwinn'd, Desmarañado.
to Unwist, Destorcer.

Unwistled,

Untwisted, Destorcido.
Untwisting, Destorcidura.
Unvanquished, Invicto.
Unvincible, Invencible.
Unviolable, Inviolable.
Unus'd, Desusado.
Unwall'd, Sin paredes, Desemparedado.
Unwary, Incáuto.
Unwash'd, Por labar, No lavado.
Unwashed, Por regar, No regado.
to Unweave, Destexer.
Unweav'd, Destexido.
Unweaving, Desteximiento.
Unwedded, Por casar, No casado.
Unweldy, Descompollado.
Unwilling, Sin gana, Sin voluntad, Desganado.
Unwillingly, Sin voluntad.
to Unwind, Desarrevolver.
Unwise, Imprudente.
Unwisely, Imprudentemente.
Unwish'd, Sin Deseo, No deseado, Por desear.
to Unwitch, Desencantar.
Unwith'er'd, Por marchitar.
Unwittingly, Impensadamente, Imprudentemente.
Unwonted, No acostumbrado.
Unworkman like, No como oficial, No como diestro en su oficio, Rudamente, Ignorantemente, Inexpertamente.
Unworn, Por traer, No traído, Por usar.
Unworthy, Indigno, Indino.
Unworthily, Indignamente.
Unworthiness, Indignidad.
Unwove, Destexido.
Unwound, Desrebuído.
Unwounded, Sano, Sin herida.
to Unwrap, Desenrollar.
Unwrapp'd, Desenrebuído.
to Unwreath, Destorcer.
Unwritten, Por escribir, No escrito, Dejado en blanco.
Unwrought, Por labrar, No labrado, Por trabajar.
to Unyoke, Desunzir.
Unyok'd, Desunzido.
Unyoking, Desunzimiento.

V O.

a Vocabulary, Vocabulário.
Vocal, Vocal.
a Vocation, or calling, Oficio.
the Vocative case, El Vocativo caso.
a Voice, Voz.
a big Voice, Voz abultada.
to make Void, Evacuar, Vaziar.
Void, Vazio, Nulo.
Voided, Vaziado.
a Valley of shot, Salva, Roziada.
a Volume, Volumen, Tomo, Libro.
Voluntary, Voluntario.
Voluntarily, Voluntariamente, Espontaneamente.
Voluptuousness, Luxuria, Deleyte.
Voluptuous, Voluptuoso, Luxurioso.
Voluptuously, Luxuriosamente.
to Vomit, Bollar, Gomitár, Vomitar.
Trocár, Bollér la comida.
Vomited, Vomitado, Bollado, Gomitado.
Trocado, Buéto.
Vomiting, Gómito, Gomitadura, Vómito, Bolladura.
to Vouch, Afirmar.
Vouch'd, Afirmado.
to Vouchsafe, Dignar.
Vouchsafed, Dignado.
to Vow, Votar, Hazer voto, Tomar voto.
a Vow, Voto.
Vow'd, Votado.
a Vowel, Vocal.
a Voyage, Viage.
to take a Voyage, Hazer viage.

U P.

Up, or stand up, Pónte en pié.

Up there, Aý encima.
to go up, Subir.
to rise up, Levantarse.
Upon an end, En pié.
get up, Levantate.
Up betimes, Levantado temprano.
to Upraid, çaherir, Dar en rostro, Denostar.
Upbraided, çaherido, Dado en rostro, Denostado.
Upbraiding, çaherimiento, Denuésto.
Uplandish, Villano, Rústico, Montañez.
to Uphold, Sustentar, Mantener, Sopor-tar.
Upholden, Sustentado, Mantenido.
an Upholsterer, Colchonero, Camero.
Upon, Encima.
Upper, Superior.
Upright, Derecho.
Uprightly, Derechamente.
an Uproar, Rumor, Tumulto, Buído, Motín, Sedición, Alboroto, Bulicio.
to make an Uproar, Alborotar.
an Uprising, Levantamiento.
Upside down, Lo de arriba abáxo.
Upward, Hazia arriba.

U R.

Urbanity, Criança, Urbanidad.
an Urchin, Erizo.
Ure, Uro, Costumbre.
to come in Ure, Venir en uso.
to Urge, Compeler, Impeler, Apretar, Instigar.
Urg'd, Compelido, Impelido, Apretado.
Urgent, Necesario, Urgente, Preciso.
Urgently, Urgentemente, Precisamente.
Urine, Orina, Urina.
a Urinal, Orinal.
to Urine, Orinar.

U S.

Us, Nosóttros.
Usage, Tratamiento.
to Use, Usar.
Use, Uso.
a gentleman Usher, Gentilhombre.
Usual, Acostumbrado.
Usury, Lógro, Renuévo, Usura.
to get by Usury, Lograr.
a Usurer, Logrero, Usurario.
to Usurp, Usurpar.
Usurp'd, Usurpado.
an Usurper, Usurpador.
Usurping, Usurpando.

U T.

an Utensil, Instrumento, Vasija.
Utensil, Utilidad, Comodidad, Utíl, Provecho.
the Utmost, Lo último.
to Utter, Dezir, Esprimir.
Utterance, Espressiva.
Utter'd, Espresso.
Uttering, Esprimiendo.
Utterly, Abarrisco, De todo punto, Totalmente.
the Uttermost, Estrémo, Último.

V U.

Vulgar or common, Vulgar, Común, Ordinario.
Vulgarly, Comumente, Vulgaramente, Ordinariamente.
a Vulture, Buétre.
a place where Vultures use, Buytrera.
the Uvula, or Uvula, El Gallillo.

W.

to Waddle like a Duck, Sangolotearse.
to Wade, Vadear.
Waded, Vadeado.

to Waste, Passar.
a Wag, Socarrón.
to Wag, Meneár.
to Wag the tail, Rabeár, Coleár.
a Wagtail, Rabirúbio, Róbo de Júnco.
a Wagging, Menéo.
to Wage war, Hazer guerra.
a Wager, Apuesta.
to lay a Wager, Apostar.
Wages, Salário, Sueldo.
to Wagg, Bullir, Meneár, Movér.
Wagg'd, Bullido, Meneado, Movido.
a Wagging, Menéo, Movimiento.
Waggish, Socarrón.
to Waggle, Meneár, Bullir.
Waggi'd, Meneado, Bullido.
a Waggon, Carro.
a Flemish Waggon, Carro de Flandes.
a Wagoner, Carretero.
a Wagtail, Abadéjo, Aguzaniéve, Rábo de Júnco.
a Way, Camíno, Vía.
to go out of the Way, Desviár, Apartarse del camíno.
gone out of the Way, Desviado, Apartado del camíno.
going out of the Way, Desvío, Apartamiento del camíno.
a Wafaring Man, Viandante.
the kings high Way, Camíno real.
a little narrow Way, Caminillo.
this Way and that way, Allende y aquénde, Por aquí y por allí.
uneasy Ways to go in high and low, Altibaxos, Subidas, y baxadas.
a place in heav'n call'd by Astronomers Via lactea, the milky Way, Camíno de Santiago en el Cielo.
Waight or weight, Pésó.
to Wail, yell or crie out, Guayar, Llorar, Lamentar.
one that Wails, Guayador.
Wailing, Duélo, Guayas, Llôro.
a Wain or Cart, Carreta.
a Wain driver, Carretero.
the Wain of the Moon, Menguante de Luna.
to Wainscot, Entablar.
Wainscoted, Entablado.
Wainscoting, Entabladura.
the Waist, middle or girdle Red, La cintura.
to Wait for, Esperar, Aguardar.
to Wait upon, Servir.
to ly in Wait, Acechar.
a lying in Wait, Acechança.
Waited for, Esperado.
Waited on, Servido.
a Waiter, Criado, or Servidor.
one that lies in Wait, Acechador.
Waiting or tarrying, Aguardando, Esperando.
lying in Wait, Acechando.
Waites, certain Musical Instruments so call'd, Chirimías.
a waiting Woman, Donzella.
Wauwaranes, Travellura, Contumacia, Protervidad.
Wauward, Contumáz, Traviçlo.
Wauwardly, Contumazmente.
to Wake or watch, Velar.
to Waken, Despertar.
Waken'd, Despertado.
Wakeful, Vigilante.
Wakefully, Despiertamente.
Wakefulness, Vigilancia.
Waking, Despierto.
an Herb call'd Wake-robin, Aaron.
Wakes or contry feasts, Fiestas, or báyles, Vigiliás.
to Walk, Andar, Passar.
the Walks shipboard, Combés.
the Walk in the Gally, Cruxia.
one that Walks, Passador.
to Walk abroad in the Air, Espaciarse, Passarse.
Walking, Passéo.
Walk Anden, Patéo, Passadéro.
to Wall in or about, Cercar con muralla, Murar, Emparedar.

W A R

a Wall about a City, Muralla, Muro, Cúca.
 a Wall of an House, Paréd.
 a Wall of stones heap'd together without Morter, Albarrada.
 to close within a Wall, Emparedár.
 Wall'd, Paredado.
 a Wall of Hurdles, Paréd de çárço.
 a Waller, Balija, costál, quilma, Taléga, çuiron, Alórja.
 a little Waller, Barjuléta, Alforjilla.
 a Walnut, Nuéz.
 a Walnut-tree, Nogál.
 Walworth, Sabúco pequeño.
 to Wallow, Bolteár, Rebolcár, Rebolverse.
 to Wallow like a Duck, Anadeár.
 Wallow'd, Rebolcado.
 Wallowing, Rebolcando.
 to Wamble or rise up as seething water, Boibolleár.
 Wambling, Barbolleando.
 to have a Wambling in the Stomach, Tener váscas.
 a Wand, Vára.
 to Wander or go astray, Errár, Vagár, Andár perdido.
 Wandred, Errado.
 Wandring, Andando perdido, Errando, Vagando.
 a Wandrer, Andador, Erradizo.
 Wan or pale, Amarillo, Pálido.
 to be or grow Wan or pale, Amarilleár, Perder la color.
 Wany, Palidamente.
 Wanness, Amarilléz, Palidéz.
 to Want, Carecér, Faltár, Marrár, Tener falta, Tener necesidad.
 Want, Defecto, Falta, Múrta, Menéster, Méngua.
 Wanting, Defectivo.
 in Want, Fóbic.
 Want in measure, Mérgia.
 a Want or Mole, Tópo.
 a Want hill, Montón de Tópo.
 to be Wanton, Sér Regalón, or Logáno, Reteçar.
 Wanton, Logáno, Regalón, Reteçón.
 Wantonness, Loganía, Regáto.
 Wantonly, Reteçosamente.
 to Warble or quaver in singing, Garganteár, Hazér garganta.
 Warbling, Garganteando.
 to Ward, keep, or defend, Guardár, Defendér, Amparár.
 to Watch and ward, Rondár.
 to Ward off a Blow, Repárar un golpe.
 Warded, or defended, Guardado, Defendido, Amparado.
 Watch'd and warded, Rondado.
 a Bonwarded off, Golpe reparado.
 a Ward in a City, Búrrio.
 the Ward of a Lock, Guárda.
 a Warden or Guardian, Guardián, Protector.
 a Warder in a Tower, Portéro.
 a Warder, Guardador.
 a Wardrobe, Recámara.
 a keeper of a Wardrobe, Guárda Rópa.
 Ware that is bought and sold, Mercaderías.
 to put in a Warehouse to be kept, Almezenár.
 put in a Warehouse to be kept, Almezenado.
 a Warehouse, Almazén.
 to be Wary, Estar fóbic, Recatárse, Andár con recato.
 Wary, Cúto, Recatado, Receloso, Mirado, Avisado.
 Warnings, Recato, Recío.
 Wary, Advertidamente, Recatadamente, Avisadamente.
 Warmth, Calór.
 to Warm or make warm, Calentár, Escalentar.
 to grow Warm, Cobrár calór.
 Warm, Abigado, Caliente, Caloroso, Cálido.

W A T

Warm'd, Calentado.
 a Warm sunny bank, Abigáño.
 luké Warm, Tibio.
 Warming, Calentadura, Escalentamién to.
 a Warming pan, Calentador de cáma.
 to make luké Warm, Entibiar.
 Warm'd, Entibiado.
 Warmly, Calientemente.
 Warmness, vid. Warmth.
 to Warn or admonish, Apercebir, Amonestár, Avisár, Escarmentár, Citár.
 fore-Warn'd, Apercebido, Amonestado, Avisado, Escarmentado, Citado.
 a Warner, Apercebidór, Amonestador, Citador.
 a Warning, Amonestación, Aviso.
 to Warp, Urdír.
 Warp'd, Urdido.
 the Warp of cloth, Urdiémbré, Tráma.
 to Warrant, assure, or promise for a Certainty, Asigurar, Alégurar.
 Warfare, Milicia.
 to War, wage, or make war, Guerreár, Hazér guerra.
 civil War, Intestina guerra.
 War, Guerra.
 a Man of War, Guerréro.
 a man of War or ship, Navío de Guerra.
 a War Horse, Cavallo guerréro.
 Warske, Bélico, or Belicóso.
 Warr'd, Guerreado.
 a Warrior, Guerréro.
 a Warren, Bivár.
 a Warte, Berruga, Verruga.
 full of Wartes, Berrugoso.
 to Wash, Lavár.
 the Water things have been wash'd in, or suds, Lavazias.
 Wash for Swine, Corrida de puércos.
 a Washer or Launder, Lavandéra, Lavandéra.
 Washing, Deslavadura, Lavadura.
 a Washing Beetle, Batidor.
 a Washing place, Lavadero.
 a Wasp, Abísipa.
 to Waste, Despendér, Gastár, Desperdiciar.
 to lay Waste, Arruynár, Gastár.
 Wastful, Pródigo.
 Waste, Gásto, Desperdicio.
 lay'd Waste, Arruynado, Gastado.
 Wasted, Gastado, Desperdiciado.
 Wasting, Gásto, Desperdicio.
 a Wastband, Cintura.
 a Wastcoat, Almilla.
 Waste paper, Estraga, Papel viejo.
 to Watch, walk or not sleep, Trasnóchar, Velár, Desvelár.
 a Watch tower, Garita, Ataláya.
 to Watch or espy, Acechar.
 a Watchman, Vél, Guárdia.
 Watchful, Vigilante.
 to Watch upon a high place or tower, Atalayár.
 to Watch and ward, Rondár.
 a Watchman on a tower or high place, Ataláya.
 Watchfully, Vigilantemente.
 Watchfulness, Vigilancia.
 a Watch or Guard, Velada.
 a Watchword, Apellido de guerra, El nombre.
 Watch'd, Acechado.
 Water, Agua.
 to compass about with Water, vide to compass.
 to Water or moisten as a garden, Regár, Remojár, Mojar.
 to Water a beast, Abrevár.
 to make Water, Orinar.
 rose Water, Agua rozada.
 Water parsley, Apio.
 a Water lily, Escudete.
 Water-creffes, Berros.
 a Watermill, Acéña, Haçéña, or Haçéña.
 a place full of Water, Regadizo.

W E A

a Water shoot, Canal de água, Cáo, Gólpe de água.
 a Watering place for Cattle, Abrevadero.
 a Watercourse, Acéquia, Canal.
 Watered or made drink, Abrevado.
 a Water-pail, Cúbo.
 Watery, Aguanoso.
 Watersish, Idem.
 Watersishly, Aguanosamente.
 Watersishness, Aguanosidad.
 a Waterman, Barquero.
 a Watering pot, Regadero.
 holy Water, Agua bendita.
 a holy Water pot, Pila de água bendita.
 strong Water, Agua ardiente.
 orange-flower-Water, Agua de Azahar.
 a Wattle wal, Taybique, Tabique.
 to Wave up and down, Oleár, Ondeár.
 a Wave of the sea, Ola, or Onda.
 to Waver or wag too and fro, Meneár, Bulir.
 Wavering, Movible.
 to Wax or grow, Crecér.
 to Wax fair weather, Abonárse el tiempo, Abonanzár.
 Waxing, Creciendo.
 to Wax towards day, Amanecer.
 to Wax, Encerár.
 Wax'd, Encerado.
 Wax, Cera.
 sealing Wax, Lácre.
 a Wax chandler, Ceréro.
 a Wax candlestick, Ciriál.
 a Waxing kernel, Nacida.
 Way, vid. Waie.

W E.

to Weaken, or make weak or feeble, Debitár, Enflaquecér.
 to grow Weak, Enflaquecérse, Perder fuérças.
 Weak, Débil, Endéble, Fláco.
 Weaken'd, Debilitado, Enflaquecido, Perdidas los fuérças.
 Weakness, Debilidad, Flaqueza.
 a Weakening, Debilitamiento.
 Wealth, Hazienda, Riqueza.
 Wealthy, Rico, Hazendoso.
 a common Weal, or weal publick, or common wealth, República.
 to Wean, Destetar.
 a Weaning, Desteto.
 Weapons, Armas.
 a Weapon with two pikes, Bisarma.
 Weapon'd, Armado.
 Weaponless, Desarmado.
 to Wear, Consumir, Gastár, Usár, Traer Vestir.
 Worn, Gastado, Usado, Traído.
 Wear, or wearing, Uso.
 Weares, dammes, or sluces, to stop the course of water, Repréça, Présa.
 Weared with a matter, Enfaltidiado, Fatigado, Enfadado.
 to make Weary or tire, Fatigár, Canfár, Enfadár, Molestár.
 Wearying, Canfancio, Fastidio, Fatiga, Moléstia.
 Weary or tir'd, Afanado, Canfado, Enfadado, Lásfo, Fatigado.
 Wearily, Canfadamente, Fatigosamente.
 Weariness, Afán, Canfancio, Enfado, Fatiga.
 Wearisome, Canfado, Enfadado, Moléstito.
 a Weasand of the Throat, Gargüero, or Guargüero.
 Weather, Tiempo.
 a Weather-cock, or van, Veléta.
 fair Weather, Bonança, Buen tiempo, Tiempo sereno.
 foul Weather, Mal tiempo.
 a Weather or gilded sheep, Carnúo castrado, or Capado.
 to Weave, Texér.

to Weave in, Entexér Entretexér.
 to Weave thick, Tupír.
 Woven thick, Tupido.
 a Weaver, Texedór.
 Weaving, Texedúra.
 a Weavers shuttle, Lançadéra.
 a Weavers loom, Telár.
 a Weavers beam, Enxúllo de telár.
 a Web of cloth, Liso, Téla.
 a Web of yarn, Estámbré.
 a Web in the Eye, Nube en el ojo.
 to Wed, Casar.
 Wedded, Casado.
 Wedded to his own Opinion, Teterúdo, Pertináz.
 a Wedding, Boda.
 the Wedding bed or room, Tálamo.
 a Wedding song, Epitalámio.
 a Wedge, Cuña.
 to Wedge, Acuña.
 Wedg'd, Acunado.
 Wedlock, Matrimonio.
 Wednesday, Miércoles.
 We, Nosotros, Nos.
 a Weedhook, Escardilla.
 to Weed, Escardar.
 Weeds, Escardas, Malas hierbas.
 a Weeder, Escardador.
 Weeding, Escardadura.
 Weeded, Escardado.
 a Week, Semana.
 Weekly, Semanero.
 the Week in a candle, Mécha.
 a Wheel to take Fishes, Buytrón, Garlito, Nassa.
 to Ween, suppose, or deem, Suponer, Presuponer, Imaginar.
 Weening, Suposición, Presuposición, Imaginación.
 to Weep, Lacrimar, Lamentar, Lagrimar, Llorar, Planir.
 Wept, Llorado, Lamentado, Planido.
 a Weeper, Llorador, Lamentador, Planidor.
 one that Weeps much, Lacrimoso, Lagrimoso, Llorón.
 Weeping, Llora, Lamento.
 Weepingly, Llorosamente.
 a place where they Weep or Mourn, Lloradero, Lamentadero.
 as it Were, Como si fuera.
 a Weefel, Comadréja.
 to Weigh, Pesar.
 to Weigh ancor, çarpár áncora, Levár ferro.
 to Weigh down, Apesgar, Oprimir.
 Weighing down, Apesgamiento, Opresión.
 Weigh'd, Pesado.
 Weighing, Pesando.
 to Weigh in a Balance, Balançar.
 a Weigher in Balance, Balançero.
 a Weight, Peso.
 Weighty, Pesado.
 Weighty or of Moment, De Importancia.
 Weightily, Pesadamente.
 Weightiness, Peso.
 a Weir in a river, Représa, Présa.
 a Well, Pozo.
 Well, Bien, Buenamente.
 very Well, Muy bien.
 Well enough, Abastánça.
 Well then, Aora bien.
 Welcome, Acetáble, Bien venido.
 to Welcome, Dar la bienvenida.
 Welcome's, Que ha recibido la bienvenida.
 Welfare, Salud, Prosperidad.
 Well a day, Ay de mí.
 Well born, Bien nacido.
 Well spoken, Bien hablado.
 Well minded, or willing, Benévolo.
 a Well or periwinkle, Caracol.
 a Well fish, Caracol de mar.
 a Welt of a Garment, Orla de ropa, Bralión.
 Weltb, or Wealth, Riqueza, or hacienda, Biénes de fortuna.
 a Wench, or Girl, Mocha.

a great ramping Wench, Barragána.
 a Wen, Puérca.
 Wensday, Miércoles.
 Wery, or Weary, Cançado.
 Werish, or unfavoury, Desabrido.
 the Wesand, or Weasand, La nuéz del pefuço, El Gargüero, or Guargüero.
 the West, Poniente.
 the West wind, Zéphiro or Céphiro, Gallego, Oeste.
 Westery, Occidental.
 to Wet or make wet, Mojar.
 Wet at sea, Mareado.
 Wet Mojado.
 Wetness, Mojadura.
 a Wetter, Mojador.
 Wetly, Mojadamente.
 Wetness, Humedad.
 a Wetting, Mojadura.
 a Wevil or wevel, Carcoma.

W II.

a Whalefish, Vallena, Ballena.
 a Wharf, Puerto, Desembarcadéro, Muéle.
 What, Que.
 What of that, Que tenemos con ésto.
 Whatsoever, Qualquiera.
 Whay, Suero.
 a Wheal, wheel, push or pimple, Ampollita, Chichón, Venino.
 Wheat, Trigo.
 white Wheat, Trigo candeal.
 red Wheat, Rubión, Truxillo.
 a Wheel, Ruéda.
 to Wheel about, Rodear.
 one that Wheels about, Rodeador, Compasador.
 a Wheelwright, El que háze ruédas, Ruedero.
 a Wheel barrow, Carretón.
 Wheel'd, Rodado.
 a Wheeling about, Rodéo.
 to Wheeze, Anhelar.
 a Wheezing, Falta de respiración.
 a Whelk, vide Wheal.
 a Whelp, Cachorro, Perrico, Perrito, Perrillo.
 a little Whelp, Cachorríco.
 When, Quando.
 Whence, Dónde, De do.
 Where, Adó, Do, Donde.
 Whereas, Por quanto.
 Wherefore, Por lo qual.
 Wherein, En que.
 Whereof, De lo qual.
 Where soever, Dónde quiera.
 a Wherry, Esquife.
 a Wherry man, Esquifero.
 Whether, Adónde.
 Whether soever, Adónde quiera.
 to Whet, Aguzar.
 Whetted, Aguzado.
 a Whetter, Aguzador.
 Whetting, Aguzamiento.
 a Whetstone, Aguzadera.
 a Whetstone whereon Oil being put, the Gravers and Carvers whet their Instruments, Aguzadera.
 Which, Qual.
 which Way, Por dónde.
 Whig, Leche azeda.
 While, Mientras.
 a While egone, Denantes, Ráto ha.
 a great While, Gran rato.
 a little While, Un ratíco.
 a While hence, De aquí a un rato.
 Whist, Entre tanto, Mientras.
 to Whine, Llorar.
 to Whip or scourge, Açotár.
 a Whip, Açote.
 a Whipper, Açotador.
 Whipp'd, Açotado.
 Whipping, Açotamiento.
 to Whip up and down like a wagtail, Saltar como pespita.
 a Whipsaw, Sierra.
 to Whirl or turn round, Tornar al rede-

dór, Rebolvér a todas maros.
 a Whirligig, Trompa.
 a Whirlpool, Abifino, Gólo, Remolino de agua.
 a Whirlwind, Remolino, Torbellino.
 a Whirl about like a Whirlwind, Arremolinar, Remolinar.
 a Whirret, Cachetón.
 Whirretted, Cacheteado.
 a Whisk, Escobilla.
 to Whisk, Escobillar.
 Whisk'd, Escobillado.
 Whiskers, Bigotes.
 to Whisper, Dezir al oído, Dezir en secreto, Hablar al oído.
 Whispering, Diciendo al oído, or en secreto susurrando.
 to make a Whistling noise, Rechinar, Crujir, Silvotear.
 to Whistle, Silvar.
 a Whistle, Silvato.
 Whistled, Silvado.
 a Whistler, Silvador.
 Whistling, Silvo.
 White, A'lbo, Blanco, Cándido.
 Whited, Blanqueado.
 to Whiten, Blanquear, Emblanquear, or Blanquear.
 a Whiter or bleacher, Blanqueador.
 a White or mark to shoot at, Blanco.
 Whitsst, Blanquezino, Blanquisco.
 White lilly, Azucena.
 the White of an Egg, La clara del huevo.
 White lime to whiten ash walls, Yésto.
 Whiting, Colada, Emblanqueamiento, Blanqueadura.
 Whiteness, Blancor or Blancura.
 Whited with Ceruse, Enalvayáldado, Dado con Alvaýáldo.
 to Whiten a wall, Enluzar, Blanquear, Enyesar.
 White thorn, Espina blanca.
 a Whiting, Merluza.
 White Leather, Baldrés.
 Whither, vide whether.
 well Whittled or cupfoot, Bien borracho, Bien bebido.
 the feast of Whitsontide, Pascua del Espíritu Santo, Fiesta de Pentecosté.
 to Whiz, Zumbár.
 a Whizzing, Zumbido.
 Whizz'd, Zumbado.
 Who, Quén.
 Who soever, Quién quiera.
 Whole, Entero.
 Wholly, Abanisco, Del todo, Enteramente.
 Wholeness, Enteréza.
 Wholesome, Provehoso, Sano, Saludable.
 Wholesomly, Saludablemente.
 Wholesomeness, Sanidad.
 Whom, Quién.
 the Whoop-bird, Abubilla.
 to Whoop, or hollow, Gritar, Vozear.
 to commit Whoredome, Amancebar, Fornicar, Putear, Rufanear.
 a Whore, Púta.
 a Whoreson, Hiedpúta.
 a Whoremonger, or Whoremaster, Abarraganado, Fornicador, Putanero, Rufian.
 Whoredom, Fornicación, Rufanería, Putanería.
 Whoredom where one party is married or both, Adultério.
 Whorish, Putanésco, Aputado.
 a Whore that haunts Church yards, Púta carcavéra.
 Whose, Cuyo.
 Why, Porque.

W I.

Wicked, Facinoroso, Malo, Malino, Vicioso, Perverso, Iníquo.
 to do Wickedly, Hazer maldades.
 Wickedly, Inquamente.
 Wickedness, Maldad, Malignidad.
 Wicker, Vimbres, Mimbres.

a Wicket, Postigo.
Wide, Ancho.
Widely, Anchamente.
Wideness, Anchura.
Widemouth'd, Boquiabierto, Boquiróto.
a Widow, Viuda, Viúda.
a Widower, Biúdo, Viúdo.
to become a Widow, Embrudar.
Widowhood, Buidéz.
to Wield, Manejar.
Wielded, Manejado.
Wielding, Manéjo.
a Wife, Mugér.
a buswife, Mugér de su casa.
a Wiffler, Baltonéro.
a Wig of bread, Bollico.
a Wig, or Perrwig, Cabellera.
Wild, Acorado, Bravo, Brábo, çaharéño, Fiero, Indómito.
to be Wild, Acorarse.
a Wildbeast, Fiera.
a Wild onion, Búlbo.
Wildness, Bravéza, Brabéza, Fieréza, Indómitéz.
Wildly, Acoradaménte.
a Wild fig tree, Cabrahigo.
a Wilderness, Yérmo, Desierto.
Wild fire, Fuégo Griégo.
to Will or command, Mandar.
Will, Gána, Voluntad.
a last Will, Testamento.
to make a Will, Testar.
good Will, Benevoléncia.
Willing, Voluntario, De buena gana.
Willingly, De buena gana.
with good Will, De buena gana.
Willful, Tieso, Pertináz, Contumáz, Obstinado.
Willfulness, Tefón, Tefonería, Contumacia, Obstinación.
Willfully, Con tefón, Pertinazménte.
William, Guillérmo.
a Willow or osier, Bimbrera.
a Willow tree, Sauze.
Wily, Altúto.
a Wimple, Barréna, Taladra.
a Wimple or muffler, Mascara.
to Wince or kick, Coçear.
a Winch, Tórno, Tornillo.
the Wind, Viéto, Ayre.
the east Wind, El viéto Levante, Léste, Éuro.
the west Wind, Zéúro, Zéphiro, Oéste, Favonio.
the north Wind, El viéto del nórté, Cíerço, Aquilón.
the south Wind, El viéto sur, Viéto de médio día.
to take the Wind as a ship does, Barloventear.
Windy, Ventoso.
Windiness, Ventosidad.
to Wind, Venteár.
to Wind a horn, Tocár cuérno.
to Wind up or roll, Emmarañar, Rebolvér, Devanar.
to Wind, or turn about, Girar, Boltear.
to Wind up a Watch, Dar cuérda al reloj.
to get the Wind, Ganar a barlovento.
to gather Wind, Atraér el ayre.
a little Wind, Vientecillo.
Winded up, Emmarañado, Rebuélto, Devanado.
a Winder up, Emmarañador, Rebolvédor, Devanador.
a pair of Winding stairs, Caracol.
Wound or compass'd about, Atado, Rebuélto, Emmarañado, Devanado.
Wind or breath, Refuélto.
a Wind beam of a house, Viga.
the Windpipe, Gafante.
a Winding sheet, Mortaja.
a Windlass or pulley, Carillo.
a Windmill, Molino de viéto.
a Window, Ventána.
a little Window, Ventanilla.
a lattice Window, Zelosía.
a grated Window, Ventána enrejada.
to throw the house out at the Windows,

Rebolvér la casa.
Wine, Vino.
red Wine, Vínó tinto.
white Wine, Vínó bláncó.
new Wine, Móltó.
Wine new press'd, Móltó torcido.
new Wine sodden to the third part, Arrope.
old Wine, Vínó añéjo.
Wine press'd out with water, Aguapíe.
a Wing, Ala.
a little Wing, Aléta.
Wing'd, Aládo, Con alas.
to Wink, Guinar.
to Win, Aquistar, Conquistar, Ganar.
to Win by assault, Espugnar.
Won by assault, Espugnado.
Won, Aquistado, Ganado, Conquistado.
to Winnow, Ahechar, Despajar.
Winnowing, Despajadura, Ahechaduras.
the Winnowings, Ahechaduras.
to Winter or pass the winter in some Place, Invernár.
a Winterhouse, Invernéro.
Winter, Inviérno.
Winter like, Inverniego.
Wintering, Invernando.
Winter shoes or socks to put in shoes, Gallochas, Escarpines.
pertaining to Winter, Invernál.
to Wipe or make clean, Limpiar.
to Wipe dry after washing, Enxugar, Secar.
to Wipe off, Borrár.
Wip'd, Limpiado.
Wiping, Limpiadura.
Wire, Alambre.
a Wire drawer, Tirador de alambre.
to be Wise, Sér sábio.
Wise, Cauto, Cuérdo, Sábío, Sávio, Discréto, Entendido.
Wisely, Cuerdaménte.
Wisdom, Sabiduría, Prudéncia, Entendimiento, Cordura.
a Wise man, Hombre discreto, Sábío, Cuérdo, Entendido.
in no Wise, De ninguna suerte.
to Wish, Deseár.
a Wish, Deseo.
Wish'd, Deseado.
a Wisher, Deseador.
Wishing, Deseando.
a Wisp of straw, Púño de paja.
a Wisp, maze or wreath, Rodilla, para poner sobre la cabeça quando se carga algo.
Wit, vid. Witt.
to Witch or bewitch, Hechizar, Encantar, Enbrujar.
a Witch or sorcerer, Echizéro, Hechizéro, Hechizera, Brúja.
Witchcraft, Hechezeria, Hechizo.
a Witch Elm, O'lmo silvestre.
With, Con.
With you, Con vosotros.
With us, Con nosotros.
Within, Adentro.
Without, Afuera.
to Withdraw, Retirar.
Withdrawn, Retirado.
a Withdrawing, Retirada.
to Withber, Marchitar, Bochornar, Secar, Desmayar.
Wither'd, Bochornado, Marchitado, Secado, Desmayado.
that which may Withber, Marchitable.
Withering, Marchitadura.
Within, Dentro.
to Withhold, Detenér.
Withholden, Detenido.
Withholding, Detenimiento.
Without, Fuera, Sin.
Without reason, Irracional.
Without order or rule, Irregular.
to Withstand, Contravenir, Resistir, Oponér, Obstár.
Withstood, Contravenido, Resistido, Opuésto, Obstado.
to Witness, Testiguar, Atestiguar.
a Witness, Testigo.

Wit, Ingénio.
a Witty jest, Donáyre, Grácia.
Witty, Acucioso, Ingenioso, Sagáz, Agúdo, Sutíl.
Wittily, Acuciosamente, Ingeniosamente, Sagazménte.
a Witty Speech, Dicho agúdo, Agudéza, Donáyre, Grácia.
Witting, Consentimiento, A sabiendas.
Wittingly, Adrede, A sabiendas.
a Witwal or woodwal, a bird, Abejeruco.

W O.

Woe be to you, Ay de ti.
Woe or sorrow, Melancholía, Tristéza, Pesar, Duélo.
Woeful, Triste, Melancólico, Apefádo, Pesaroso.
a Wolf, Lobo.
a she Wolf, Loba.
a little Wolf, Lobillo.
Wolfsbane, Anapelo.
a Womb, Vientre.
a Woman, Mugér, Hémbra.
a masculine Woman, Mugér varonil, Marimácho.
to grow like a Woman, Afeminarse.
a gossiping or gadding Woman, Comadrera, Callejera.
a Womanlike Man, Hombre adamado, or Mugeril.
Womanly, Mugerilmente.
belonging to Women, Mugeril.
a little Woman, Mugercita.
a discreet Woman, Cuérda mugér.
a Woman of great Account, Mugér de púnto, or de importancia.
to Wonder at, Admirar, Maravillar, Espantarse.
Wonder'd at, Admirado, Maravillado, Espantado.
Wondering, Admiración.
Wonderful, Admirable, Maravilloso, Espantoso.
one that Wonders, Admirador.
Wonderfully, Admirablemente.
a Wonder, Maravilla.
Wont, Acostumbrado, Avezado.
Woodbind or Honyfuckle, Madreselva.
a Woodcock, Gallina ciega, Chócha Perdiz.
to be Wood or mad, Estár loco.
a Wood, Selva, Arcabúco, Bósque, Monte, Florésta.
a Wood lark, Calándria, Cogujada.
Wood, Léña, Madéro.
Wood pil'd up, Léña hacinada.
a Wooden patten, Abarca.
a Wooden pin, Hito de madera.
a Woodmonger, Léñador.
Woody, or thick of Wood, Boscáge, Selvático, De mucha arboléda.
a Wood culver, Torcaça, Torcaza.
a Woodhouse, Sarmentera.
a Woodknife, Machete, Cuchillo de monte.
a Wood pile, Hácina.
to Woe or sue, Enamorar, Garçonear, Galanteár.
a Wooing, Galantéo.
Woe, Enamorado, Garçonado, Galanteado.
a Woer, Garçon, Requebrador, Galanteador.
the Woof in weaving, La Téla.
Woodblad Herb, Barváco.
Wool, Lana.
a pack of Wool, Góma de lana, Trespóntin, Bála.
a Wool-weaver, Tejedor.
a Wool-man, Lanéro.
linsay Woolsey, Estameña.
saint Johns Woort, Caraconzillo.
a Word, Palabra.
to carry Word, Dar aviso.
a short Word, Palabrilla.
to Work, Trabajar.
to leave Work, Alçar de obra.

Work, Trabajo, O'bra.
a little Work, Obrecita.
small Work, Laborcita.
a Workman, Artífice, Labrador, Obrador, Obrero.
Workmanship, Artificio.
Workmanlike, Artificiosamente.
needle Work, Labor de aguja, Costura.
the World, Mundo.
Worldly, Mundano.
a Worldling, *idem*.
a Worm, Gusano.
a little Worm, Gusanillo.
a Worm that breeds in old Timber, Carcoma.
a ring Worm, Empéyene.
aglow Worm, Lucicnaga.
a Worm that eats holes in Ships, Broma.
a Worm in the hand, Arador.
an earth Worm, or *Worm in the Belly*, Lombriz.
a Worm breeding in a Horse, Canino.
Wormeaten, Carcomido.
the Worm in the Teeth, Neguijón de dientes.
to gnaw as Worms in old Timber, Carcomer.
to breed Worms, Criar, Gusanos.
full of Worms, Gusaniénto.
Wormwood, Absinthio, Alózn, Afensio, Enlénsio, Ajénjo.
Wormwood wine, Vño de enfensio, or de Ajénjos.
Worn, or *wear*, Traído, Viejo.
Worse, Peor.
to make Worse, Empeorar.
made Worse, Empeorado.
making a thing Worse, Menoscabo.
growing Worse, Peoria.
to become Worse, Empeorar.
Worst, Mas malo, peor.
to Worship, Adorar, Venerar.
Worship, Veneración, Adoración.
your Worship, Vuestra Merced.
Worshipp'd, Adorado.
Worshipping, Adoración.
Worshipful, Magnífico, Venerable.
Worshipfully, Magnificamente.
to be Worth, Valer.
Worth, Valor.
Worthy, Digno, Dño.
to be Worthy, Merecer, Ser Digno.
Worthiness, Mérito.
Worthily, Dignamente.
Worthless, De ningún valor, Sin mérito.
Worthlessly, Vilmente.
Worthlessness, Vilcia.
a Wor-wail of a Nail, Uñcro.
Wofed yarn, Estambre.
to make with Wofed yarn, Estambrar.
done with Wofed, Estambrado.
to Wot, or *know*, Saber.
Woven, Tekido.
the Wolf of cloath, Tela.
Would to God, Pluguiéste a diós.
to Wound, Acuchillar, Herir, Llagar, Hazer mal.
a Wound, Herida, Lliga.
Wounded, Acuchillado, Herido, Llagado.
full of Wounds, Llagado, Llén de Lligas, or Heridas.
a Wounding, Herimiento.
Wound, Rebuésto, Rebuxado, Devanado.

W R.

Wrack, *vid.* *Wreck*.
to Wrangle, Cavilar, Andar a malas, Reñir, Contender.
a Wrangler, Pendençiero, Reñidor.
Wrangling, Bréga, Renzilla.
to Wrap, or *intangle*, Arrollar, Embolvar, Enlazar, Enmarañar.
Wrapp'd, Embuélto, Arrolado.
a Wrapper, Paño de embolvar, Arpilera.

Wrapping, Arrollando, Embolviendo, Revolviendo.
to Wrestle, Luchar.
a Wrestler, Luchador.
Wrestling, Lucha.
Wrestler like, Como Luchador.
Wrath, Indignación, Ira, Yra, Saña, Enójo.
Wrathful, Iracundo, Irado, Sañado, Enojado.
Wrathfully, Enojosamente, Iracundamente, Sañudamente.
to Wreak ones Anger, Soltar la cólera.
to Wreathe, Estorçer, Retorçer.
Wreathed, Retorcido.
Wreathing, Retorcédura, Retorcimiento, Torcedura.
a Wreck at Sea, Naufragio.
to Wreck, or *suffer Shipwreck*, Naufragar.
Wreck'd, Naufragado.
Wrecking, Naufragio.
one that has suffer'd Shipwreck, Naufrago.
a Wren, Picanço.
to Wrest, *wreath*, or *wrench*, Estorçer, Torçer.
Wrested, Torcido.
a Wrestler, Torcedor.
Wrestling, Torcedura.
Wrestle, *vid.* *Wrestle*.
to be Wretched, Acevilarse, Ier Melquino, Pobre, Miserable.
a Wretch, Melquino, Miserable.
Wretched, Acevilado, Miserable, Misero, Mezquino.
Wretchedness, Miséria.
Wretchedly, Miserablemente.
Wrie, or *crook'd*, Tuerto, Torcido, Corvo.
Wrie-neck'd, Cabezcaydo, Cabiztuerto.
to Wrinkle, Arrugar.
a Wrinkle, Arruga, Ruga.
Wrinkled, Arrugado.
Wrinkling, Ruga, Arruga.
full of Wrinkles, Rugoso.
to Wring, Apretar, Torcer.
a Wringer, Apretador, Torcedor.
Wringing, Apretando, Torciendo.
Wring, Apretado, Torcido.
the Wrist, La Muñeca de la mano.
to Write, Escribir.
a Writer, Escritor.
Written, Escrito.
Writing, Escribiendo.
a Writing, Escritura.
to Write out fair, Sacar en limpio.
to Writhe, or *wreath*, Retorçer, Torcer.
to Wrong, or *injury*, Injuriar, Agraviar.
Wrong, Injuria, Agravio.
a Wronger, Agraviador, Injuriador, Maltratador.
Wrongs, Defaueos, Injurias, Agravios.
Wronging, Agraviando, Injuriando, Maltratando.
Wrongful, Injurióso.
Wrongfully, Injuriosamente.
Wrought, Labrado.
Wrought Velvet, Terciopelo labrado.
Wrung, *vid.* *Wring*.
Wry, *vid.* *Wrie*.

Y.

a Y *Ard to Measure*, Vára.
a Yard or Court, Pátio.
the Yard of a Ship, Entena, Vériga.
a Yarn, Lana.
Yarrow, Milhója.
to Yawn or gape, Bocezar, Boitezar, Desperazar.
a Yawning, Bocezo, Boitezo, Desperazo.

Y E.

Ye, Vos, Vosótro.
Yea, Si.
a Year, Año.
one Year old, de un Año.
the last Year, Antaño.
Yearly, Cada año.
leap Year, Año bisiesto.
well in Tears, Anciano.
Yeast, or *barm*, Espuma de servéa.
to Yield, Rendirse, Darse por vencido.
that has Yielded, Rendido.
a Yielding, Rendimiento.
to Yield up, Entregar, Rendir, Conceder, Relignar.
Yielding up, Entrega, Relignación.
Yielded up, Entregado, Rendido.
a Yielder up, Entregador.
Yielding, Entrega.
to Yell or cry out, Aullar.
one that Yells, Aullador.
a Yelling, Aullido.
the Yolk, or *yolk of an Egg*, Yéma del huévo.
Yellow, Guáido, Jálido, Amarillo.
Yellowish, Avañillajo.
Yellowness, Avañilliz.
to Yelp, Ganir.
Yelp'd, Ganido.
a Yelper, Ganidor.
a Yelping, Ganidura.
a Yoman, Labrador rico, Hidalgo.
a Yeoman of the guard, Alabardero, Archero.
Yesterday, Ayer.
Yesterday Evening, Ayer tarde.
Yes, Aun.
Yet notwithstanding, Empero.
a Yew sheep, Oveja.
to Yex, Hipar.
an Yuck, Pulgáda.
to give an Yuckling, Dar a entender.

Y O.

to Yoke, Unzir.
a Yoke, Coyunda, Yugo.
brought under the Yoke, Sojulgado.
to bring under the Yoke, Sojugar.
Yok'd, Unziado.
Yoking, Unziendo.
the Yolk of an Egg, Yéma.
Yonder, Allá, de la otra banda, Del otro cabo, Acullá.
to be Young, Ser móço.
to wax Young again, Remoçar.
Young, Móço.
a Young Man, Jóven, Mançébo, Móço.
a pretty Young Girl, Moçita bonita.
Younger, Mas móço.
a Younger Brother, Hermano menor.
Youngest, El menor.
Youngly, Como móço.
a Youth or young Man, Jóven, Mançébo, Móço.
lusty Youth, Juventud.
Youthfully, Como móço, Juvenilmente.
Your, Vuestro.
You, Vuestra merced, Vos, Tu.

Y R.

it Takes, Enója, Enfada, Disgusta, Enfastidia.
Tak'some, Fastidioso, Enfadoso, Enojoso, Enfadado.
Tak'some, Fastidioso, Enfadoso, Enojoso, Enfadado.
Yon work, Herreria.
a worker in Yon, Herrero.
done with Yon, Herrado.
Yon, not wrought with hammer, Herrero por labrar.

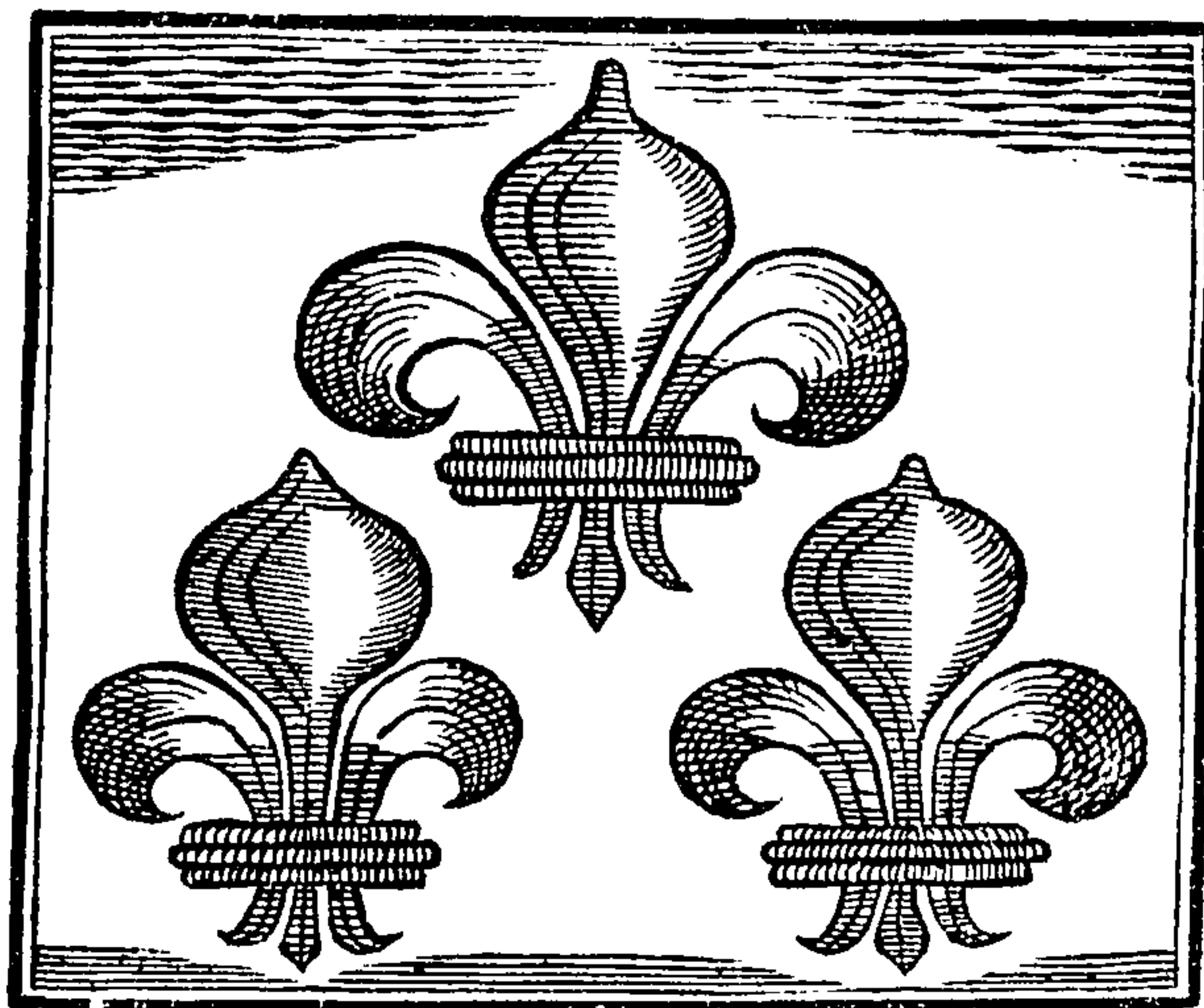
Z E A		Z E N	Z O N
Z.		Zealously, Zelofaménte. very Zealously, Muy zelozaménte.	Z O.
Z Eal, Zêlo. to have Zeal, Zelár. a Zealor, Santurrón. Zealous, Zelófo.		Z E. the Zenith, El Zenit, El punto verti- cál.	the Zodiack or Circle in Heaven, or which are the Twelve Signs, Zodi- aco. Zoilus, Zóilo. a Zone, Zóna.

F I N I S.

A
NEW SPANISH
GRAMMAR,

WITH SOME
REMARKS

UPON
SYNTAX.



L O N D O N,

Printed for George Sambridge, at the *Three Golden Flower-de-luces* in *Little-Britain*, 1706.

A NEW SPANISH GRAMMAR.

Of the LETTERS and the MANNER of
Pronouncing, and using them in Writing.

I THINK it needless to trouble the Reader with the Definition and Division of Grammar, and therefore shall enter immediately upon the Spanish Alphabet, which is as follows.

A, b, c, ç, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, l, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, x, y, z.

The Spaniards properly have but 22 Letters, which are all the same as ours, only omitting k and w, and tho' here be Twenty Six set down: The Reader may observe that Eight of them are only Four Letters varied, because of the different Pronunciation, or Sound they give to Words, as shall be explain'd, they are c, and ç, i and j, l and ll, n and ñ,

A, is pronounc'd, as in French and Italian, opening the Mouth, and as in the English Words Wall, Hall, Ball, &c. so in Spanish Måno, a Hand, Pållo, a Stick, &c.

B, differs not from the English, or other Languages in the Pronunciation, but in Writing the Spaniards often confound it with the V Consonant, which is Sounded exactly like it, of which an Account shall be given under that Letter. Two b's, or the double b, are not us'd in Spanish Orthography, unless some will write Abbad, Abbadesa, Abbadia and Abbadengo, which is not frequent, and never in any other Word. B, is always writ before the Consonants l and r, and never v Consonant, as in Blas, Cåbra, &c. Except only the Word Avrè, Avràs.

C, Follows the English Sound, for before, a, o and u, it is like a k, as in Càra, a Face, Còco, a Coco-Nut, Cuchåra, a Spoon; but before e and i, it is softer than the k, as in Cecina, Salt-Meat, Cielo, Heaven, in which Words it is as with us in Certain, Civil. But

ç Thus Mark'd with a Dash under it, call'd in Spanish ç Cedilla, and by our Printers Ceceril, is pronounc'd before a, e, and u, as the plain c is before e, and i, that is much softer than an s, as in the Words çaraguèles, great Hose, çoçobras, Troubles, çurròn, a Scrip, &c.

Ch, in Spanish is always Pronounc'd as in the English Words Chase, Check, Chick, Choke, Chuf, so in Spanish Chapèta, a Plate of Metal, Corchete, a Hook for Cloaths, Chispa, a Spark of Fire, Choça, a Cottage, Lechuga, a Lettice, &c.

D, has the same Sound as in Latin, French and English, at the Beginning, or in the Middle of a Word, but at the end when it follows a, is wholly omitted, and only adds an Emphasis to the last Vowel, as Castidad, Chastity, is sounded Castidà, strong on the last; After e, i, and ú, it retains its Sound, tho' not altogether so strong as in English, as in Sed, Thirst, Lid, Strife, Ataud, a Coffin. Two d's, or double d is never us'd in Spanish.

E, is as in Latin and French, and as in the English Words Bend, Send, Lend, so in Spanish they say Bendezir, to bless, Desleår, to desire, Besår, to Kiss, &c.

When Two e's are together in a Word they are both distinctly Pronounc'd, as in the Words Leer to read, Creer to believe, &c.

F, is the same as in English and other Languages, only this may be observ'd, that the Spaniards generally use it instead of Ph, for they write Filòsofo, a Philosopher, and so in other Words, even in proper Names as Felipe, Philip.

G, Before a, and o, has the same Pronunciation as in English, in the Words Gall, and Gold, so the Spanish Gato, a Cat, Gota, a Drop.

Before u, when a Consonant follows, it is Pronounc'd in the same Manner, as Gula, Gluttony, Gusano, a Worm. But if an a follows the u, then gu, takes the Sound of the English w, as in Guante, a Glove, Agua, Water, read Wante, Awa. Except only the Word Menguå, Decrease, where the g retains its force, and it is Pronounc'd as if writ Mengwa, and so in its Derivatives. But if e, or i, follows the u, then it is Pronounc'd like the French Guerre, Guide, &c. Or like the English Get, or Giddy, so the Spanish Guerra, War, Guia, a Guide. Except in the following Words Guero, Adde, Agüero, an Omen, Ciguëña, a Stork, Pediguëño, given to Begging, Sigüenza, a City in Spain, Vergüenza, Shame, Degüello, a Beheading, Reguelo, a Belch, Ungüento, Ointment, which read as if Writ in English Wero, Awero, Cwëña, Pediwëño, Siwënza, Verwënza, Dewello, Rewello, Unwënto.

G, Before e, and i, is sounded somewhat guttural, or like an Aspiration, coming from the Roof of the Mouth, not unlike the English Words Whey, and Why, as to the Guttural Sound in these, not that the Spanish Partake any thing of the w, so Gemir, to groan, Gingibre, Ginger, here the g's are brought from the Roof of the Mouth next the Throat, like a gentle Blowing in the Throat.

H Before n, is always lost as Ignominia, Ignominy, Ignorancia, Ignorance, read Inominia, Inordacia, and so in others.

H, Which is rather a Note of Aspiration, than a Letter, tho' never to be omitted in Writing many Spanish Words, is never Pronounc'd in the least, as in these Words Håmbre, Hunger, Hembra, a Female, Hijo, a Son, Hombre, a Man, Hurto, a Theft, read, Ambre, Embra, Ijo, Ombre, Urto. After T, it is always omitted, for they write Teologo, a Divine, not Theologo. So also after P, it is rarely found, but instead of ph, they use F, as Filòsofo, a Philosopher, and not Philosopho. When ue follows h, it is sounded like our w, so for Huésped, an Host, or Guest, jay, Wésped, for Huéilo, a Bone, Wéilo, for Huérta, an Orchard, Wérta. After c, it is sounded as in English in the Words Chalk, Chest, Chisel, Choten, Church, so in Spanish say Canto, Flat, Caína, a Pebble, Cooça, a Cottage, Lechuga, an Onion.

I, In Spanish, is sounded as in all other Languages except English, or as in English in the Words Visible, Terrible, or the like. This is as to the I Vowel, but the

J Consonant call'd in Spanish *J Jota*, differs from all other Languages, and is Pronounc'd in the Throat, being taken from the Arabick. It is a Sound hard to be describ'd, because every Language has not the same, yet some are not without it. The Dutch have it in *ch* as in *Acht, Eight, Nacht, Night*, the Welch in *Ll*, as in the Name *Lloyd*, which we improperly pronounce *Floyd*, neither is the English without this Guttural Sound, which frequently occurs in *wh, what, where, why, &c.* which is the true Sound of the Spanish *J* Consonant, or *J Jota*. I am sensible, this will hardly give every Reader a true Notion of this Pronunciation, but there are somethings that cannot be made out in Writing, and especially Sounds are the hardest to express. Some will seem to express it by *gh*, but that will not exactly come up to it, yet it has much of the *h*, spoke harsh in the Throat, as in the English words above mention'd. Something has been already said of this Sound in the Letter *g*, before *e* and *i*, to which the Reader may turn to avoid Repetition, because it is the same exactly with that there describ'd, insomuch that some, tho' improperly use either *g*, or *j* Consonant, indifferently before *e*, which is a Fault, for before *e*, it should be always *G*, and not *J* Consonant, except in proper Names, as *Jesús, Jerusalén, Jerónimo, &c.* tho' the last is often writ with a *g*. Tho' the Pronunciation be the same, and so before *i*, but before *a, o, and u*, *J* Consonant is always us'd, as *Jarro, Josef, Julto, and so Género, Gingibre*. The *x*, as shall be said in its Place, sometimes has the same Sound, and therefore is frequently confounded with the *J* Consonant in the Middle of a Word, but more of it shall be said there.

K, Is no Spanish Letter, and therefore needs not be mention'd, but is sometimes, tho' seldom found, in Foreign proper Names, or in the Greek Kalendas, and pronounc'd as with us.

L, When single, differs nothing from the English, and all other Languages, but when double, as *Ll*, is pronounc'd as the Italian *gl*, or the French *ll*, which somewhat resembles our *li*, yet so that the *i* must be joyn'd to the following Vowel, like a Diphthong, as in the words *Llave, a Key, Llevar, to carry, Llover, to rain; speak them as in the Italian Mòglie Figli, or the French Fille, Coquille, &c.* or as if writ in English *Liave, Lievar, Llover, Liuvia*, making as was before said, a sort of Diphthong of the *ia, ie, io, and iu*. And for this Reason all Latin Words, that have a double *L*, are written in Spanish with a single one, to avoid altering the Sound, Illustris in Spanish *Ilústre*, Syllaba, *Sílaba*, Collegium, *Colegio*, and so in all others. Observe that at the end of a Word, *L* is never doubled, but often in the Middle, as *Querella, a Quarrel, or Complaint, Parrilla, a Gridiron, &c.* where it is pronounc'd as above.

M, Is pronounc'd as in English and other Languages, but is never at the end of any Spanish Word.

N, Is also sound'd as in English, and never doubled in Spanish, and therefore all Latin Words having a double *n*, are writ with a single one in Spanish, as *Tyrannus, Tyrano, &c.* But the Spanish *n*, with a Dash over it thus *ñ*, call'd in Spanish *n Fila*, is pronounc'd like the Italian, or the French *gn*, or almost like our *ni*, joyning the *i*, as was said above of the double *ll* to the following Vowel, like a Diphthong, so *Niño, a Child, Montaña, a Mountain* read as you would if Italian *Niguo, Montagna*, or according to the English, as *Ninio, Montania*, contracting the *io*, and *ia*, into one Syllable or Diphthong, as has been said.

O, Is pronounc'd as in Latin, French, Italian, and other Languages, and as in English in the Words *Hope, Scope, Trop*, and the like, but never as in the Words *Long, Strong, Prong, &c.* which sound more like the Spanish *a*, the *o* by them always preserving its full Sound as above.

P, No way differs from the English, but is never doubled in Spanish, and therefore all Latin Words that have it double, when made Spanish, must be writ with it single, as *Appetitus, Apetito, Apparatus, Aparato, &c.*

Q, Before *ua*, is pronounc'd as in Latin and English in the Words *Quantity, Quality, or the like*, so in Spanish *Quar- tana, Quisado, Qual, &c.* But before *ue*, or *ui*, the *u* is in a manner lost, and it is like the Italian *Ch*, or the French *Que, Qui*, or as the English *Ke, Ki*, so the Spanish Words *Questión, a Question, or Quarrel, Quieto, Quiet, must be read Kestion, Kieto*. However, before *en* at the beginning, or in the Middle of a Word, the *u* is pronounc'd as we do in English, as in the Words *Consequencia, a Consequence, Eloquencia, Eloquence; but at the end of Words it is sunk again, as Tóquen, Repiquen, &c.*

R, Is pronounc'd as in English and other Languages, but observe that at the beginning of words, it is sound'd strong as harsh, as if it were a double *rr*, as in *Róma, Rome, Réy, and King, Ríma, a Rhime, Rubio, Fair, &c.* In the Middle of a Word, when single, it is pronounc'd as soft, as the Nature of it will bear, as in *Ara, an Altar, Herége, an Heretick, Móro, a Moor; but when doubled, there cannot be too great a Stress or Harshness lay'd on it, as in Bárro, Clay, Pérrro, a Dog, &c.*

S, In the beginning of Spanish Words is like the Latin, Italian and French, and like the English in the Words *Sand, Set, Sin, Sed, Sudden*, so in Spanish *Sabér, to know, Sembrár, to sow, Silvár, to whistle, Sobrár, to be over and above, Sudár, to sweat.*

But a single *s* in the Middle of a Word, contracts a Harshness like our *z*, as it does in the French *Eglise, a Church, &c.* and in the English *Cause and the like; so in the Spanish give that harsh Sound to Causa, a Cause, Casa, a House, Ulo, Custom. But if there be a double *s* in the Middle of a Word, then the Harshness is lost, and it is spoke sharp as in the English Word *Tuss'd, Cross'd, &c.* so the Spanish *Gruéssro, thick, Tíessro, stiff, &c.**

At the end of a Word it is soft and smooth, without any of the Harshness above mention'd, as *Cárta, Letters, Pélas, weights, &c.*

Note, That *s* never begins a Word in Spanish, when a Consonant immediately follows, but has always an *e* set before it, tho' the Words be deriv'd from the Latin, which begin with *sp, st, or sc*, for the Latin *Spero, I hope*, in Spanish is writ and spoke *Espero*, so *Stella, a Star, Eitrella, Scribere, to write, Escribir.*

T, No way differs from English and other Languages, excepting only that in Spanish it is never us'd as in Latin and English to be pronounc'd as *ci*, when a Vowel follows *J*, as in *Actio, an Action, Ambitio, Ambition, and the like*, for in Spanish all such Words are writ with a *c*, as *Ambición, Prudéncia, &c.* The *t* always preserving its own Sound before i, tho' another Vowel follows, as in *Tía, an Aunt, Cantia, a Quantity, &c.* Observe also that the Spaniards never write *T* before *H*, but instead of *Theologia, Teología, for Theodosius, Teodósio, &c.*

U, Vowel is not pronounc'd as in English, *Stue, Brue, Crue*, but like our *ou*, or rather like our double *o*, as *Tu, you* read *Tee, Buche, a Maw, read Booche.*

V, Consonant in Spanish is always pronounc'd like a *b*, insomuch that they are often indifferently us'd in writing, but this must be done with Caution as being allowable, only in those Words, which are Originally Spanish, or those that have the Latin *p* chang'd into *b* or *v*, as *Cabeza, or Caveza, a Head from Caput*, and these Allowances are but rare, for it is absurd to believe what many ignorantly affirm, that *b* and *v* Consonant may be indifferently us'd, because pronounc'd alike. It is a general Rule without Exception that all Words, which in Latin or other Languages from which they are deriv'd, are writ with *v* Consonant, must be so writ indispensably in Spanish, and the same of those writ with *b*, and this, besides Reason that pleads for it, is asserted by many Learned Spaniards, and among the rest by Dr. Juan Perez de Montalvan, in his Play call'd, *No ay vida como la honra*, towards the end of it; where he introduces the Viceroy of Valencia, blaming his Secretary for writing the Word *Vida, Life*, with a *b*, which should be an *v* Consonant, in these Words, *Que vida con v se escribe, No Secretario con b.* Thus we see it is against Orthography, to spell *Vida*, with a *b*, because the Latin *Vita*, is spelt with *v* Consonant, and the same is to be understood of all other Words of that Nature *Vaca, a Cow, Vena, a Vein, Vino, Wine, Voto, a Vow, Vulgo, the common People, &c.* This same is asserted by F. Francis Peres de Naxera, in his *Ortografia Castellana*. Yet the Pronunciation is always as *b*, as for *Vaca*, pronounce *Baca*, for *Avaro, Abaro*, and so of all the rest.

X, In Spanish call'd *Equis*, before all Vowels this Letter has the same Pronunciation, as the Spanish *J* Consonant, or *J jota*, and is therefore in some Words indifferently us'd, as *Xarave, or Jarave, Syrup, Bruxa, or Bruja, a Witch. See the manner of pronouncing of it Guttural, or in the Throat in J Consonant. This Rule is always observ'd when a Vowel follows it, and the Word is merely Spanish, or deriv'd from the Arabick, and so when it ends a Word, as *Relox, a Clock, Box, &c.* But in Words deriv'd from the Latin *x*, is often pronounc'd like an *s*, as in *Exhortár, to exhort, pronounce Esfortar, for Eximír, to exempt, read Esimír, for Exorbitánte, Exorbitant, Esorbitánte, and so in others of this sort. The same is to be observ'd, when a Consonant follows *x*, as for *Experto, Expert, read Esperto, for Extérno, External, read Eltérno, for Extrémo, Extreme, Etrémo.***

Y, Is pronounc'd in the same manner as the *I* Vowel. Alone it signifies and. It is us'd before another Vowel, as in *ya*, already, *yo*, I, *Ráya*, a Line, also after a Vowel, and then the two make a sort of Diphthong, as *Náype*, a Cord, *Estóy*, I am, *Yégua*, a Mare, *Yelo*, Frost or Ice, &c. and generally it ought to be us'd in all VVords deriv'd from the Greek, and writ with Ypsilon, as *Hydropico*, *Cyclope*, &c., I say, it ought to be according to good Orthography, but Custom, and the Ignorance of many have allow'd a License in this particular.

Z In Spanish call'd *Zéta*, is pronounc'd very soft, without any of that Harshness we give it in English, and has the very same Sound, as the *ç* call'd in Spanish *C*, *Cedilla*, which is sweeter than the *S*.

Of Diphthongs.

A Diphthong, is the sounding of Two Vowels together, as if they were but one, as in English *Aid*, *Ailing*, *Audience*, &c.

In Spanish, There are Twelve Diphthongs.

The First in *ai*, or *ay*, as *Gáita*, where *a* is most prevalent, *Gáita*, a Bag Pipe, *Andáys*, ye go, *Cantáys*, ye sing.

The Second in *ao*, where *a* is most sounded, as *Saráo*, a Bal or Dance, *Bilbáo*, the Town of Bilbao in Biscay.

The Third in *au*, where *a* Prevails as *Cáufa*, a Cause, *Autór*, an Author.

The Fourth in *ei*, or *ey*, where *e* is most prevalent, as, *Rey*, a King, *Léy*, a Law.

The Fifth in *eu*, where *e* sounds most, as *Féudo*, A feof, *Déudo*, a Kinsman.

The Sixth in *ia*, or *ya*, where *a* sounds most as *Sáya*, a Petticoat, *Váya*, let it go, *Pradéncia*, Prudence.

The Seventh in *ie*, or *ye*, where *e* sounds strongest, as *Viento*, the VVind, *Piédra*, a Stone, *Ciélo*, Heaven.

The Eighth in *io*, or *yo*, where *o* prevails, as *yó*, I, *Dió*, he gave, *Vió*, he saw.

The Ninth in *iu*, where *u* is most sounded as *Cludad*, a City.

The Tenth in *oi*, or *oy*, where *o* prevails, as *Sóy*, I am, *Dóy*, I give.

The Eleventh in *ué*, where *e* prevails, as *Fuérça*, Strength, *Muérte*, Death.

The Twelfth in *ui*, or *uy*, where *i*, or *y* prevails, as *Fuy*, I was, or I meant, *Cuidádo*, Care.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong, is the sounding of Three Vowels together in one Syllable, of these there are Five Sorts.

The First in *iai*, or *yay*, where the Stress lyes upon *a*, as *Vayáys*, may you go, or that you may go.

The Second in *iey*, where *e* is sounded strongest, as *Enzuciéys*, may you foul, or that you may foul.

The Third in *ieu*, where *e* is most pronounc'd, as *Arroyuélo*, a little Brook.

The Fourth in *uai*, or *uay*, where *a* prevails, as *Guáy*, Alas.

The Fifth in *uei*, or *uey*, where *e* sounds most, as *Buéy*, an Ox.

Of Accents.

HAVING accented all the Spanish Words throughout the Dictionary, the Learner will find where he is to lay the Stress in every one, which is as much as is necessary, without descending to distinguish betwixt Acutes, Graves, and Circumflexes, for here only the Acute is us'd, which settles the Pronunciation at once, without perplexing the Memory.

It must be own'd, no certain Rule can be given for Accents, they vary so much, yet something must be said in general, which take as follows.

No Spanish VVords can end in any other Consonants, but *d*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *x*, *z*, all which have the Accent on the last Syllable.

In *d* as, *Ciudad*, a City, *Lealtád*, Loyalty.

In *l*, as *Animál*, an Animal, General, General, or a General, Except in this Letter, *A'ngel*, *A'bil*, *Apóstol*, *A'rbol*, *Cárcel*, *Cristóval*, *Cónsul*, *Débil*, *Diffícil*, *Móbil*, *Dócil*, *Eltéril*, *Estiércol*, *Fácil*, *Dátíl*, *Frágil*, *Útil*, *Fértil*, *Mástíl*, *Mármol*, *Trébol*.

In *n*, as *Capitán*, a Captain, *Faylán*, a Pheasant. Except *Jóven*, *Cármén*, *Crímen*, *Márgen*, *O'rdén*, *Vírgen*, *Exámen*, *Volúmen*, *Imágen*, *Betúmen*, *Estévan*.

In *s*, as *Combés*, the Deck of a Ship, *Aragonés*, an Arragonian. Except all Verbs ending in *s*, as *A'mas*, *Lécs*, *Dices*, *Andámos*, *Corríteys*, &c. and the Plural Number of Substantives, or Adjectives, as *Casas*, *Hómbres*, *Buénos*, *Málos*, *Grándes*, &c. Except also *Mártés*, *Juéves*, *Miércoles*, *Viérnes*, and *Entónces*, but these have the Accent in the Penultima, because of the Two Consonants following together.

In *r*, as *Mugér*, *Amór*, *Placér*. Except *A'nsar*, *A'mbar*, *Acíbar*, *Açúcar*, *Açófar*, *Alcáçar*, *Nácar*, *Cáncer*, *Mártyr*.

In *x*, as *Relóx*, *Carcax*.

In *z*, as *Rapáz*, *Arracéz*, *Perdíz*, Excepting Surnames of Families, as *Martínez*, *Alvarez*, *Rodríguez*.

All VVords ending in *i*, have the Accent on the last, as *Allelí*, *Perdí*.

For the most part the Spanish VVords deriv'd from the Latin, preserve their Accent, as *Obediécncia*, *Benefício*, *Cúlpa*, *Dóte*, *Família*. But we must except all that end in any of the Consonants above mention'd, the Greek Names of Sciences as *Filosofía*, *Teología*, *Geografía*, as also *Antipatía*.

Adverbs of Place have the Accent on the last Syllable, as *Acá*, *Acullá*, *Allí*.

All Diphthongs naturally claim the Accent on them, because of the Contraction of the Two Letters into one, as *Apáufo*, *Niéto*.

VVhen after a Vowel Two Consonant follows, that Vowel of Course must have the Accent, as *Bastánte*, *Bastárdo*, *Cuérdó*.

This may suffice for Accents in general, what cannot be brought into these few Rules, being so uncertain, that it had better be left to Practice, for Abundance of Rules, and those not infallible do rather amuse than instruct.

The Eight Parts of Speech, and first of the Noun.

In Spanish, as in Latin, there are Eight Parts of Speech.

Noun, Pronoun, Verb, Participle.	} Declin'd	Adverb. Conjunction, Preposition, Interjection.	} Undeclin'd.
---	------------	--	---------------

A Substantive, is that which can stand by it self, without an Adjective, as a Man, a Horse. An Adjective is that which cannot stand by it self as, a Learned Man, a mettlesome Horse.

Of Nouns there are proper Names, signifying a thing determinate as Juan, John, Róma, Rome.

Appellatives, signifying things undeterminate, as Templo, a Church, or Temple, Casa, a House.

Diminutives, in which the Spanish exceeds all other Languages, there being no word but what admits of a Diminutive, and some of many. These Diminutives are form'd by adding to the word, illo, íco, íto, éte, íno, uélo, or éjo, and sometimes óte.

For example, Hómbre, a Man, Forms, Hombrecillo, Hombrecico, Hombrecito; Muchacho, a Boy, Muchachillo, Muchachico, Muchachito, or Muchachuélo; where observe that the Diminutive in illo, as Hombrecillo is generally us'd in way of Contempt, and signifies a little piteous Fellow, whereas those in íco, or íto express a liking or kindness as Juanico or Juanito, Johnny, or Jacky.

Diminutives in éte, or íno, as Móço, a Youth, Mocéte, a little Lad, Paloma, a Pigeon, Palomino, a little young Pigeon; in éjo, as Cuchillo, a Knife, Cuchilléjo, a little Knife; but this also implies something of Contempt, or Dislike; in óte as Hidálgo, a Gentleman, Hidalgóte, a small Gentleman.

The same is us'd in Adjectives as Grande, Great, Grandecillo, Grandecico, Grandezuelo, Grandéte, all which signify Greatish, or a little Great.

There are besides Diminutives formed upon Diminutives, as from Chíco, small, comes Chiquito, smaller, and from that Chiquitico, &c.

As there are Diminutives, so there are Augmentatives, which increase a thing without any Degree of Comparison. These are form'd by adding to the Noun, ázo, or on, as Hombre, a Man, Hombrázo, a great lusty Man; Péro, a Dog, Perázo, a great large Dog. In on, as Sortija, a Ring, Sortijón, a great Ring.

The Nouns Numeral or of Number, are as follows.

1 Uno	15 Quínze	90 Novénta	2000 Dos mil
2 Dos	16 Díes y léys	100 Cién, or Ciento	3000 Tres mil
3 Tres	17 Díez y siete	101 Ciento y uno	4000 Quátro mil
4 Quátro	18 Díez y ócho	200 Docientos or doziéntos	5000 Cinco mil
5 Cinco	19 Díez y nuéve	300 Treziéntos	6000 Séys mil
6 Séys	20 Véynete	400 Quatrociéntos	7000 Siéte mil
7 Siéte	21 Veinte y uno	500 Quiniéntos	8000 O'cho mil
8 O'cho	22 Veyntidos, &c.	600 Seysciéntos	9000 Nuéve mil
9 Nuéve	30 Tréynta	700 Séteciéntos	10000 Díez mil
10 Díez	40 Quarénta	800 Ochociéntos	100000 Cién mil
11 O'nze	50 Cincuénta	900 Nuéve ciéntos	1000000 Millón
12 Dóze	60 Sesénta	1000 Mil	2000000 Dos millones
13 Tréze	70 Seténta	1500 Mil y quiniéntos	3000000 Tres millones.
14 Catórze	80 Ochénta		

The Ordinals, which declare the Order of a Place or Time, As Priméro, Segundo, Tercéro, Quárto, Quínto, Sexto, Séptimo, or Seténo, Oátavo, Nóno, or Novéno, Décimo, or Dezéno, Onzéno, Dozéno, Trezéno, Catorzéno, Quinzéno, Décimo séxto, Décimo séptimo, Décimo oátavo, Décimo nóno, Veinténo, Treinténo, Quarenténo, Cincuenténo, Sesenténo, Setenténo, Ochenténo, Noventéno, Centésimo, or Cienténo, Dosienténo Trezenténo, Quatrocienténo, Quinienténo, Seyscienténo, Sietecienténo, Ochocienténo, Nuevecienténo, Milésimo.

Of Adjectives.

THE Spanish Adjectives Termination is generally in e, or o.

Those that terminate in e, admit of no Variation in any gender, as in the Adjectives, Grande, Great, Dulce, Sweet, Terrible, Terrible, &c. we say lo grande, what is great, Hombre grande, a great Man, Mugér grande, a great Woman.

Those ending in o, have the Feminine Gender in a, as Buéno, Good, Hombre Buéno, a good Man, Mugér Buéna, a good Woman.

There are some other Adjectives, which have their Termination in l, as Util, useful, Débil, weak, Frágil, Frail, Fertil, Fruitful, and others in z, as Capáz, Capable, Rapaz, Ravenous, &c. And these keep their Termination in all Genders.

Note. That the Adjectives Grande and Buéno, when placed before the Substantive often lose their last Syllable, and so we say Gran Hombre, Buen Hombre, &c. But this does not happen always, and no certain Rule can be given for it, so that it must be left to be learnt by Practice. In like manner Santo, when it signifies a Saint, always has the last Syllable cut off, and we say San Pédro, San Andrés, &c. except only Santo Domingo, Santo Tomas, Santo Toribio, because in these and such like, the cutting off the Syllable to, would lose the Sound of the Name, but in Santa no Letter is ever cut off.

Adjectives, have three Degrees, the Positive, the Comparative, and the Superlative. The Positive has been already spoken of. In Spanish there are no Comparatives form'd but their Defect is supply'd by adding to the Positive, the Articles Mas, more, or Ménos, less, as Claro, Bright, Mas claro, Brighter, Vil, Base, Mas vil, Basier.

The Superlatives are form'd, when the Positive ends in a Vowel, by changing it into ísimo, as Claro, Bright, Clarísimo, most Bright, and if the Positive ends in a Consonant, then ísimo is added, as Vil, Base, Vilísimo, most Base.

Except from these Rules the following Words:

Buén. Good, Mejor, Better, Bonísimo, Best of all.
Mal. Bad, Peór, worse, Pélimo, or Malísimo, worst of all.
Grande, Great, Mayor, Greater, Grandísimo, Greatest of all.
Pequeño, little, Menor, less, Mínimo, or Pequeñísimo, least of all.
Mucho, much, Mas, more, Muchísimo, most of all.
Poco, little, Ménos, less, Poquísimo, least of all.

Of Genders.

ALL that have hitherto treated of Spanish Grammar, have differ'd about the Genders, some allowing but of Two some of Three, and others of more, as doubtless there are and will be here made appear. The Reason of doubting is because there are but Two Articles to express the Genders of Substantives, as *El Hombre*, the Man, *la Mujer*, the Woman, but there is a Third, when Adjectives become Substantive, as *lo Bueno*, what is good, *lo malo*, what is bad.

Thus we see the Article *El*, expresses the Masculine Gender, *La*, the Feminine, and *Lo*, the Neuter, and thus we have Three Genders.

Another Reason, why some do not admit of the Neuter Gender, is because there are no Spanish Substantives of it, and therefore they Exclude it, but since it appears to be us'd at all, there is no Reason why it should not be receiv'd. Besides we have it Demonstrative in the Articles *Este Hombre*, this Man, *Esta Mujer*, this Woman, *Esto*, this thing, answering to the Latin *Hic*, *Hæc*, *Hoc*, and so in other Cases.

The Common of Two is found in Nouns, which under the same Termination signify both Man and Woman, or Male and Female, as *Este Guarda*, this Man Keeper, *Esta Guarda*, this Woman Keeper.

The Epicene in those which under the same Termination, signify both Male and Female, and have only the Masculine or the Feminine Article to express both kinds, as *Esta codorniz macho*, this Cock Quail, or *Este corçál hembra*, this Female Thrush.

There are Words of the doubtful Gender, which have either the Masculine or the Feminine Article prefixt, as *Arte*, Art, *Canal*, a Canal, *Eclipse*, an Eclipse, *Emblema*, an Emblem, *Mar*, the Sea, *Orden*, Order, *Márgen*, a Margent, *Origen*, an Original, *Tema*, a Theme.

To know the Genders of Nouns, observe these Rules.

ALL Nouns ending in *a*, are of the Feminine Gender, as *Plaza*, a Square, or Market, *Rosa*, a Rose, &c. Except *Cometa*, a Comet, *Día*, a Day, and *Planeta*, a Planet, *Profeta*, a Prophet, *Evangelista*, an Evangelist, *Poeta*, a Poet, *Ateísta*, an Atheist, *Calvinista*, a Calvinist, *Anabatista*, an Anabaptist, *Jesuita*, a Jesuit, *Alquimista*, a Chymist. Also those that come from the Greek, as *Dóigma*, *Problema*, and others, but *Emblema*, is of a doubtful Gender.

Nouns ending in *e*, are of the Masculine Gender, as *Diente*, a Tooth, *Monte*, a Mountain. Except *Azúmbre*, a Liquid Measure of near Three Pints, *Adarme*, a Dram, *Almágre*, Red Oker, *A'nade*, a Duck, *Alvayalde*, Ceruse, *A've*, a Fowl, *Calámbre*, the Cramp, *Calle* a Street, *Carne*, Flesh, *Cláve*, a Key of an Organ, *Corte*, when it signifies a Princes Court, for when it signifies cutting, shaping or contriving, it is Masculine, *Cuiente*, a Current, *Dote*, a Dowry, *Espécie*, a Species, *Fe*, Faith, *Frente*, the Forehead, *Fuente*, a Fountain, *Gente*, People, *Léche*, Milk, *Llave*, a Key, *Mente*, the Mina, *Muerte*, Death, *Nieve*, Snow, *Noche*, Night, *Nube*, a Cloud, *Nave*, a Ship, *Puente*, a Bridge, *Parte*, a part, *Serpiente*, a Serpent, *Tróxe*, a Granary. And Nouns ending in *re*, as *Costúmbre*, Custom, *Sángre*, Blood, &c. yet from this Exception are again excepted *Cobre*, Copper, *Cofre*, a Trunk, *Enjambre*, a Swarm, *Nómbre*, a Name, and the Names of Months, as *Setiembre*, *Otúbre*, *Noviembre*, *Diziembre*, which are Masculine.

Nouns ending in *i*, if Arabick are Masculine, *Alhelí*, a Lilly; but if Greek, they are Feminine, as *Sintáxi*, Syntax, *Parentesi*, a Parenthesis, is Masculine.

Nouns ending in *o*, are Masculine, as *Campo*, a Field, *Témplo*, a Church. Except *Máno*, a Hand, *Náo*, a Ship, *Pro*, Good.

Nouns in *u*, are Masculine, as *Espirítu*, the Spirit, *Impetu*, Violence.

Nouns ending in *y*, are Feminine, as *Ley*, Law, *Grécya*, a Flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

Nouns ending in *d*, are of the Feminine Gender, as *Caridad*, Charity, except *Césped*, a Turf, *Huésped*, a Guest, or Host, *Ardid*, a Stratagem, *Adalid*, a Leader, *Cenid*, the Zenith, *A'núd*, a sort of Measure, *Ataúd*, a Coffin, and *Laúd*, a Lute which are Masculine.

Nouns in *l*, are Masculine, as *Pardal*, a Sparrow, &c. Except *Cal*, Lime, *Sal*, Salt, *Señal*, a Sign, or Token, *Cárcel*, a Prison, *Hiel*, Gaul, *Miel*, Honey, and *Piel* the Skin.

Nouns in *n*, are Masculine, as *Carbón*, Cole, &c. Except *Sién*, the Temple of the Head, those that are deriv'd from the Latin Termination in *go*, as *Imágen*, from *Imago*, *Márgen*, from *Margo*; also those in *ion*, as *Región*, a Region, *Elección*, Election; and those in *agón*, as *Raçon*, Reason, *Sazón*, Season; but *Coraçón*, the Hart, and *Taraçón*, a Piece, are Masculine.

Nouns in *r*, are Masculine, as *Amór*, Love, &c. Except *Segúr*, an Ave, *Flor*, a Flower, and *Labór*, Work.

Nouns in *s*, are Masculine, as *Combés*, the Deck of a Ship, &c. Except *Més*, Harvest, *Res*, a Head of Cattle, *Tos*, a Cough.

Nouns ending in *x*, are Masculine, as *Relóx*, a Clock, *Carcáx*, a Quiver, &c.

Those ending in *z*, are for the most part Feminine, as *Paz*, Peace, *Niñez*, Childhood, *Nariz*, the Nose, *Hoz*, a Sickle, *Luz*, Light. Except *Agráz*, Verjuice, *Soláz*, Comfort, *Antitaz*, a Veile, *Almiréz*, a Morter, *Dobléz*, a Fold, or Fa'hood, *Jacz*, Furniture for a Horse, *Pez*, a Fish, *Axedréz*, a Checker, or Draughtboard, *Varníz*, Vernish, *Tapís*, a Carpet, *Matíz*, a shadowing in Painting, *Voz*, a Voice, *Albornóz*, a Moorish Coat, *Arroz*, Rice, and *Altramúz*, a Lupin.

To these Rules add, that all Nouns signifying the Male must be Masculine, as *Pedro*, Peter, *Déque*, a Duke, *León*, a Lion, *Gallo*, a Cock, and so those that signify the Female are Feminine, as *Maria*, Mary, *Condesa*, a Countess, *Leóna*, a Lioness, *Gallina*, a Hen. This is as much as need be said of Genders, there being scarce any Word, but what will be comprehended within these Rules.

Of the Declensions and the Articles.

THE Spaniards do not Decline by changing the Termination, as in Latin, but by adding and varying the Articles, as is done in English. They have but Two Numbers, the Singular, and the Plural, and Six Cases, as is Latin.

For the better understanding whereof, I will first speak of the Articles.

El, The Article of the Masculine Gender, is always placed before Nouns Masculine, as *el Hombre*, the Man; and sometimes before the Feminine if they begin with *a*, which is done only Euphonia gratia, or for the better Sound, as *El Agua*, the Water, or *El Anima*, the Soul, because it Sounds better than *La Anima*, or *La Agua*, yet this is not always done neither, for they often say and write *La Antigüedad*, and so in others.

This same Article *el* revers'd, which makes *le*, is often plac'd after a Verb, and is then Relative, as *Llamadle*, call him, *Díle*, tell him. It is also frequently Demonstrative, as *El que dice esto*, He that says this; and is us'd as a Pronoun Relative, as *El me dixo esto*, he told me this.

La, The Feminine Article is plac'd before Nouns Feminine, as *la Mujer*, the Woman, except those that begin in *a*, as was said before. It is us'd after a Verb, like the Masculine, but needs not reversing as that does, for we say *Llamadla*, call her, *Amadla*, love her. Yet the Masculine Article is often us'd in this Nature, tho' speaking of a Woman, for we say *Díle*, tell her, or him, and never *Díla*.

Lo, Is the Neuter Article, and only us'd before Adjectives made Substantives, or taken in the Sense of Substantives, as *lo grande*, what is great, &c. It is also us'd before a Verb, as *Quanto dixeris todo lo apruebo*, All say I approve of.

The Masculine Article is thus Declin'd.

Sing.	Plur.
Nom. El, the	Nom. Los, the
Gen. Del, of the	Gen. De los, of the
Dat. A, or al, to the	Dat. A los, to the
Accus. El, the	Accus. Los, the
Ablat. Del, from the	Ablat. De los, from the.

The Feminine Article is Declin'd thus.

Sing.	Plur.
Nom. La, the	Nom. Las, the
Gen. De las, of the	Gen. De las, of the
Dat. A la, to the	Dat. A las, to the
Accus. La, the	Accus. Las, the
Ablat. De la, from the	Ablat. De las, from the

The Neuter Article thus :

Sing.	Plur.
Nom. Lo, the	Accus. Lo, the
Gen. De lo, of the	Ablat. De lo, from the
Dat. A lo, to the	It has no Plural.

Of the Plural Number.

ALL Spanish Words which have their Termination in a Vowel, except y, in the Singular Number, form the Plural, by adding the Letter s, as Hombre, a Man, Hombres Men, Caválo, a Horse, Caválos, Horses, &c. But all Words ending in Consonants, which as was observ'd before, can be only d, l, n, r, s, x, and z, in the Singular, to form the Plural Number, add es, and the Words ending in y, follow the same Rule, as in the following Examples.

In d.		In l.	
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
Verdad, Truth.	Verdades, Truths.	Animál, An Animals.	Animales, Animals.
Mercéd, A Favour.	Mercedes, Favours.	Batél, a Vessel.	Boteles, Vessels.
Lid, A Debate.	Lides, Debates.	Gentil, A Pagan.	Gentiles, Pagans.
Virtud, A Virtue.	Virtudes, Virtues.	Caracol, A Snail.	Caracóles, Snails.
		Azúl, Blew.	Azules, Blew Plur.
In n.		In s.	
Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
Pan, A Loaf.	Pánes, Loafs.	Diós, God.	Dióses, Gods.
Almazén, A Store-house.	Almazénes, Storehouses.	Feligrés, A Parishioner.	Feligréses, Parishioners.
Celemín, A Peck	Celemínes, Pecks.	Miés, Harvest.	Miéses, Harvests.
Blasón, A Boasting.	Blasones, Boastings.	Mes, A Month.	Mésés, Months.
Atún, A Tunny Fish.	Atúnes, Tunny Fishes.		
In r.		In x.	
Sing.	Plur.	Those that end in x, in the Plural Change that Letter into ges, as	
Pesar, Grief.	Pesares, Sorrows.	Sing.	Plur.
Muger, A Woman.	Mugéres, Women.	Carcax, a Quiver.	Carcáges, Quivers.
Martyr, A Martyr.	Martýres, Martyrs.	Relóx, A Clock.	Relóges, Clocks.
Dolór, Pain.	Dolóres, Pains.		
Mur, a Mouse.	Múres, Mice.		
In y.		In z.	
Réy, A King.	Réyes, Kings.	Paz, Peace.	Pazez, Peaces.
Bucý, An Ox.	Bucýes Oxen.	Juéz, A Judge.	Juécés, Judges.
		Perdíz, A Partridge.	Perdízes, Partridges.
		Voz, A Voice.	Vózes, Voices.
		Cruz, A Cross.	Crúzes, Crosses.

These are certain Rules for forming the Plural Number, and for the Cases it has been said before, that they admit of no Variation in the Termination, but are declin'd by the Article, as in the following Examples.

Example of the Masculine Gender.

Sing.	Plur.
Nom. El Padre, The Father.	Nom. Los Padres, The Fathers.
Gen. Del Padre, Of the Father.	Gen. De los Padres, Of the Fathers.
Dat. Al Padre, To the Father.	Dat. A los Padres, To the Fathers.
Accus. El, Padre, the Father.	Accus. Los, Padres, the Fathers.
Voc. O Padre, O Father.	Voc. O Padres, O Fathers.
Ablat. Del Padre, From the Father.	Ablat. De los Padres, From the Fathers.

Sing.	Plur.
Nom. La Madre, The Mother.	Nom. Las Madres, The Mothers.
Gen. De la Madre, Of the Mother.	Gen. De las Madres, Of the Mothers.
Dat. A la Madre, To the Mother.	Dat. A las Madres, To the Mothers.
Accus. La Madre, the Mother.	Accus. Las Madres, the Mothers.
Voc. O Madre, O Mother.	Voc. O Madres, O Mothers.
Ablat. De la Madre, From the Mother.	Ablat. De las Madres, From the Mothers.

Adjectives,

Adjectives are declined after the same manner as Substantives, and therefore there needs no Example of them. Only observe that Adjectives made Substantives as was said above, which are of the Neuter Gender, as lo bueno, lo grande, &c. are declined in the same manner with the Article lo, instead of el, or la, and have no Plural Number.

Of Pronouns.

Pronouns are certain Words put into the Place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving to show or express the Person or thing, before nam'd without naming it over again, or a Person or thing not before nam'd.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some are call'd Primitives, or Personal, as Yo, I, Tu, you, si, he, or himself, No, todos, or Nos, we, Vosotros, or Vos, ye.

Derivatives, or Possessives, as deriv'd from those above, and signifying Possession, as, Mío, mine, Túyo, yours, Súyo, his, Nuéstro, ours, Vuéstro, yours, and their Feminine Gender, Mía, Tuya, Súya, Nuéstra, Vuéstra. Observe that before all Substantives for Mío, Túyo, Súyo, it must always be spoken and written, Mi, Tu, Su, as mi Padre, my Father, tu Madre, your Mother, su Aguélo, his Grandfather. But when a Question is ask'd, then the Answer is Mío, Túyo, Súyo, mine, yours, his, as Cúyo es esse Guante? Whose Glove is that? Answer, Túyo, yours. Cúyo es esse Cuchillo? Whose Knife is that? Answer, Súyo, his. And the same in the Feminine Gender.

To make the Plural Number of Mío, Túyo, Súyo, Mi, Tu, Su, ad she s, as was said in the Nouns, and you have Míos, Túyos, Súyos, Mis, Tus, Sus.

Demonstratives, as éste, ésta, ésto, This. Esse, ésta, ésto, that same, el, élla, éilo, he, she, or that. Éste, ésta, éste, ésta and el, are always plac'd before Nouns, as éste Libro, this Book, ésta Carne, that Flesh; but ésto, éilo, and éilo, are spoken absolutely. The Particles of the Cases are generally contracted with those Pronouns, as éste, for de éste, éstos, for de éstos.

Relatives, as Qual, which, Quién, who, and Qué, what.

For the Declining of Pronouns, see the following Examples.

The First Person Yo, thus declin'd.

Sing.	Nom. Yo.	Plu.	Nom. Nos.	Fem. Plu.	Nom. Nosótras.
	Gen. De mí.		De nos,		De nosótras.
	Dat. A mí.		A nos,		A nosótras.
	Accus. A mí.		A nos,		A nosótras.
	Ablat. De mí.		De nos,		De nosótras.

This Pronoun in the singular Number serves as well for the Masculine as Feminine Gender, so in the Plural does Nos. But Nosótras only to the Masculine, and Nosótras to the Feminine.

The Spaniards in Speech and Writing use this Pronoun Nos with the First Person Plural of the Imperative Mood, by taking away s, from the Verb, as Vámonos, for Vámos Nos, let us go: Dexémonos, for Dexémos Nos, let us leave.

The Second Person Tu, thus declin'd.

Sing.	Nom. Tu,	Plur.	Nom. Vos	Fem. Plur.	Nom. Vosótras.
	Gen. De Ti,		De Vos		De Vosótras.
	Dat. A Ti,		A Vos		A Vosótras.
	Accus. A Ti,		A Vos,		A Vosótras.
	Ablat. De Ti,		De Vos,		De Vosótras.

Note, That the Spaniards generally join to the Infinitive Mood of any Verb, this Particle os, which is as much as vos, as Habláros, to speak to you, Véros, to see you, Dezíros, to tell you.

The Third Person Si, thus

Nom. Si.	Accus. A si.
Gen. De si.	Ablat. De si.
Dat. A si.	

And has no Plural Number, nor Feminine Gender, unless you add Mismo to it, for the Masculine and Misma for the Feminine Gender, and then it has Mismos and Mismas in the Plural.

The Possessives Mío, Túyo, and Súyo, mine, thine, and his, and Mi, Tu, Su, my, your, his, as also Nuéstro and Vuéstro, all following the same Rules without any Variation, it is needless to decline them here.

The Demonstratives, Éste and El, thus.

Sing.	Nom. éste,	ésta,	ésto.	Plur.	Nom. éstos,	éstas.
	Gen. Déste,	Désta,	Désto.		Gen. Déstos,	Déstas.
	Dat. A éste,	A ésta,	A ésto.		Dat. A éstos,	A éstas.
	Accus. A éste,	A ésta,	A ésto.		Accus. A éstos,	A éstas.
	Ablat. Déste,	Désta,	Désto.		Ablat. Déstos,	Déstas.

In the singular Number of this Pronoun, the first Words in e, as éste, déste, para ésta, &c. are of the Masculine Gender: The Second, ésta, désta, para ésta, &c. of the Feminine: The Third, as ésto désto, &c. of the Neuter: But in the Plural, the first is the Masculine and Neuter: The other the Feminine Gender.

In the Genitive Case, we say éste, and éstos, casting away the first e, Euphoniae gratia, that it may sound the smoother, yet one may also say, de éste, de éstos.

Aquéste, Aquésta, Aquésto, declin'd in the same manner, and so is éste, ésta, ésto.

Aquel, and El, are declin'd both alike, but note that the Pronoun El, differs in declining from the Article El, especially in the Plural Number, where this Pronoun makes Ellos, and the Article Los, as may be seen comparing them.

Sing.	Mascul.	Fem.	Neut.	Plur.	Mascul.	Fem.
	Nom. El,	élla,	ello.		Nom. Ellos.	Éllas.
	Gen. Del,	Della,	Dello.		Gen. Delos,	Déllas.
	Dat. A el,	A élla,	A éllo.		Dat. A ellos,	A éllas.
	Acc. A el,	A élla,	A éllo.		Acc. A ellos,	A éllas.

Note, That the Spaniards use this Pronoun *Le* before a Verb thus, *Le vino a la Memoria*, it came to his Memory : *Le dijo*, he told him : *Que del alma le salia*, which came from his Soul : *Dar le lo*, to give him that : *Le respondió*, he answer'd him.

Also they use *Le* join'd to the Infinitive Mood of a Verb, by changing of the Infinitive into *i*, Euphoniae gratia, as *Hablarle*, to speak to him, *Hablarle* : *Oírle*, to hear him, *Oyrlle* : *Verle*, to see him, *Velle*.

The Relatives Que, Quien, Qual, thus.

Sing. and Plural.	{	Nom.	Qué.
		Gen.	De Qué.
		Dat.	A Qué.
		Accus.	Qué.
		Ablat.	De Qué.

In the same manner is *Quien* declined.

El qual.

		<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>				<i>Fem.</i>			
<i>Sing.</i>	{	<i>Nom.</i>	El qual,	la qual,	lo qual.	{	<i>Plur.</i>	{	<i>Nom.</i>	Los quales,	las quales.
		<i>Gen.</i>	Del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.				<i>Gen.</i>	De los quales,	de las quales.
		<i>Dat.</i>	Al qual,	a la qual,	a lo qual.				<i>Dat.</i>	A los quales,	a las quales.
		<i>Accus.</i>	El qual,	la qual,	lo qual.				<i>Accus.</i>	los quales,	las quales.
		<i>Ablat.</i>	Del qual,	de la qual,	de lo qual.				<i>Ablat.</i>	De los quales,	de las quales.

Thus much for the Pronouns.

Of Verbs.

Verbs may be divided into Active and Passive, as in Latin, but the Spanish Passive is only form'd by joining the Auxiliary Verb *Soy*, I am, to the Participle, as in English, thus *Soy Amado*, I am lov'd, *Ser amado*, to be lov'd; or by adding the Participle *Se*, either before or after the Verb, as *Se Dize*, or *Dizele*, it is said, and these are us'd in all Tenses, Moods and Persons, and therefore no more need be said of the Passive.

Of Conjugations.

There are in Spanish but three Conjugations both for Regular and Irregular Verbs. The first ends in *ar*, as, *Amar*, to love, *Hablar*, to speak. The Second in *er*, as, *Perder*, to lose, *Caer*, to fall. The Third in *ir*, or *yr*, as *Cumplir*, to perform, *Oír*, to Hear.

Of Moods.

The Moods are Five, as in Latin, viz. The Indicative, the Imperative, the Optative, the Subjunctive, and the Infinitive.

Of Tenses.

The Tenses may be said to be Seven, viz. The Present, the Preter Imperfect, the first Preter Perfect, the Second Preter, the Preter Pluperfect, the First Future and the Second Future.

Indicative Mood.

THE Present Tense of the Indicative Mood of all Conjugations of Regular Verbs, is form'd by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* into *o*, as *Amo*, *Amo*, *Veó*, *Veó*, *Cumpro*, *Cumpro*.

The Preterimperfect of the Indicative, of Verbs Regular, of the Second and Third Conjugation in *ia*, or *ya*, as *Perdía*, I did lose : *Caía*, I did fall, &c. *Oía*, I did hear, *Cumplía*, I did accomplish, &c. And of the First Conjugation all in *aba*, as *Miraba*, I did behold : *Hablabá*, I did speak.

The First Preterperfect in *y*, or *i*, as *Oí*, *perdí*, I have heard, I have lost : but of the first Conjugation all in *é*, as, *Miré*, I have beheld : *Hablé*, I have spoken.

The Second Preterperfect of all the Three Conjugations of all Verbs with this Verb *Hé*, and the Participle, as *Hé mirado*, I have beheld : *Hé leído*, I have read : *Hé oído*, I have heard.

The Preterpluperfect thus, *avía mirado*, *leído*, *oído*, I had beheld, read, heard.

The Future, of the Indicative of all Verbs Regular, and Irregular in *ré*, as *Hablaré*, I will speak : *Leeré*, *oyré*, *haré*, *podré*, *habré*, *Daré*.

The Second Future with the Auxiliary *Hé*, or *Téngo*, and the Infinitive Mood, as *He*, or *Téngo de Dar*, *de Leer*, *de Oír*.

The Terminations of Verbs thus varied as follows.

The Imperfect of the Indicative of the Second and third Conjugation thus varied.	{	ía,	or	{	as	{	as	{	Perdía,	as	{	oya,
		ías,							Perdías,			oyas,
		ía,							Perdía,			oya,
		íamos,							Perdíamos,			oyamos,
		iadeis,							Perdiadeis,			oyadeis,
		ían,							Perdían,			oyán.

The Imperfect of the Indicative of the First Conjugation, in áva, ávas, áva: A'vamos, ávadeis, ávan, as Habláva, hablávas, habláva, hablávamos, hablávadeis, hablávan.

The Future of the Indicative of all Verbs of all Conjugations.	{	ré,	{	Of First, Second and third Conjugation, in	{	as	{	as	{	hablaré,	by adding é long or Accented to the Infin. Mood r.
		rás,								hablaré,	
		rá,								perderé,	
		remos,								oyré,	
		réya,									
		rán,									

The Terminations of the Optative and Subjunctive.

The present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive of Verbs of the First Conjugation thus, by changing o, of the Indicative Present Tense into e, thus,	{	e,	as	{	hábale,
		es,			hábales,
		e,			hábale,
		émos,			hablémos,
		éys,			habléys,
		en,			háblen,

The Present of the Optative and Subjunctive of the Second and third Conjugation, by changing o, of the Present of the Indicative into a, thus,	{	a,	as	{	Léa,
		as,			Léas,
		a,			Léa,
		ámos,			Leámos,
		áys,			Leáys,
		án,			Léan.

Preter Imper. of the Optative and Subjunctive of Verbs of the First Conjugation, thus	{	ára, ría, ásse,	{	as	{	hablára, hablaría, hablásse,
		aras, rías, ásses,				habláras, hablarías, hablásse,
		ára, ría, ásse,				hablára, hablaría, hablásse,
		áramos, ríamos, ássémos,				habláramos, hablaríamos, hablásémos,
		áradeis, ríadeis, ássedeis,				habláradeis, hablaríadeis, hablásedeis,
		áran, rían, ássen,				habláran, hablarían, hablásen.

Preter Imperfect of the Optative and Subjunctive of the Second and third Conjugation, thus	{	éra, ría, ésse,	{	as	{	perdiéra, perdería, perdiése,
		éras, rías, ésses,				perdiéras, perderías, perdiése,
		éra, ría, ésse,				perdiéra, perdería, perdiése,
		éramos, ríamos, éssémos,				perdiéramos, perderíamos, perdiésemos,
		éradeis, ríadeis, éssedeis,				perdiéradeis, perderíadeis, perdiéseis,
		éran, rían, éssen,				perdiéran, perderían, perdiessen.

The Future of the Optative and Subjunctive of Verbs of the First Conjugation, thus	{	áre,	as	{	Habláre.
		áres,			Habláres.
		áre,			Habláre.
		áremos,			Habláremos.
		áredeis,			Habláredeis.
		áren.			Habláren.

The Future of the Second and Third Conjugation of the Optative and Subjunctive, thus	{	ére,	as	{	Perdiére,	as	{	Oyére,
		éres,			Perdiéres,			Oyéres.
		ére,			Perdiére,			Oyére.
		éremos,			Perdiéremos,			Oyéremos.
		éredeis,			Perdiéredeis,			Oyéredeis.
		éren.			Perdiéren.			Oyéren.

The Spaniards have the Gerund in Do, as Amándo, Leyendo, Loving, Reading, but no other Gerund, nor any Participle, unless the Passive Amádo, Lov'd, see more of the Participle in its Place.

Next follow the Examples for Conjugating of Regular Verbs, and after them the Irregular, first of the Auxiliary Verbs.

The declining of the first Auxiliary Verb AVer, to Have.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{	Yo hé,	{	I have.		Preter Imperfect	{	Avía,	{	I had.
		Tu ás,						Avías,		
		Aquel á, or há.						Avía.		
		Plural.						Plur.		
		nosótroz Avémos, or Hémos.						Avíamos,		
		vosótroz Avéys.						Avíadeys.		
		aquellos án, or hán.						Avían.		
										Thou hadst, &c.

First Preter Perfect.	U've, U'viste, U'vo, or Húvo. U'vimos, U'visteis, U'viéron, or Huvieron.	I have had, &c.	Preter Plu- perfect Tense.	Avia, Avias, Avia. Aviamos Aviadeis, Avian.	Avido.	I shall or will have, &c.
Second Pre- ter Per- fect.	Yo He, Tu ás, Aquél á, or Ha. (Avémos. Nosótroz hémós, or Vosótroz Aveys. Aquéllos án, or hán.	Avi- do.	I have had, &c.	Futur.	Avré, Avrás, Avrá. Avrémos, Avreys, Avrán.	Have thou &c.

This will not admit of a Second Future.

Imperative Mood.

A'yas tu, or Aved vos. A'ya aquel.	Have thou, &c.
Ayámos nosótroz, Avéd vosótroz, A'yan aquéllos.	

The Spaniards use instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten* of *Tengo*, I have, or I hold: Which *Tengo* is often us'd for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood, *Ten* of *Tengo*, so commonly us'd for *ayas*, *aya*, is thus declin'd.

The Imperative of <i>Tener</i> , common- ly us'd for the Imperat. of <i>Avér</i> , to have.	Tén tu. Ténga aquel. Tengámos nosótroz. Tenéd vosótroz. Téngan aquéllos.	Hold thou. Let him hold. Hold we, or let us hold. Hold ye. Hold they, or let them hold.
---	--	---

See this Verb among the Irregular.

Nota, The Optative Mood is us'd with these Signs, *Oxalá*, or else *O G*, or *Pluguéssse a Dios*, would to God, I pray God, God grant. The Potential like the Latin, with these Signs, *May*, *can*, *might*, *would*, *should*, or *ought*: Both declin'd like the Subjunctive following: But that the Optative and Potential, always make their Future Tense and Present Tense all alike, as *Oxalá yo áya*, I pray God I have: So in the Future, *Oxalá yo áya*, I pray God I have hereafter: *Oxalá yo Revéle*, God grant I reveal, Future tense also, *Oxalá yo Revéle*, God grant I reveal hereafter, and so of the rest.

And because the Optative and Potential, have their Future Tenses all one with their Present: And the Subjunctive has two Futures, and both differing from the Present, I will decline the Subjunctive, by which the other Two are fram'd.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	A'ya, A yas, A ya. Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	When I had.	Preter Pluper. Como.	Uviéra, or Uviéssse. Uviéras, or Uviésses. Uviéra, or Uviéssse. Uviéramos, or Uviésssemos. Uviérades, or Uviéssseis. Uviéran, or Uviéssen.	When I had had, &c.
Preter Im- perf. Como.	Auría, uviéra, uviéssse. Aurias, uviéras, uviésses, Auría, uviéra, uviéssse. auriamos, uviéramos, uviésssemos auriadeis, uviéradeis, uviéssseis, Aurian, uviéran, uviéssen, Or decline with H. Huviera, Huviéssse, or Oviéra, Oviéssse.	When I had or did have, &c.	First Future Como	Uviére, Uviéres, Uviére. Uviéremos, Uviéredeis, Uviéren.	When I shall have here- after, &c.
Preter Perfec. Como.	A'ya, A yas, A ya. Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	Avido.	When I have had, &c.	Auré. Auras, Aurá, Aurémos, Auréys, Aurán.	Avido, When I shall have here- after, &c.

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Avér.]	to Have.
Aviendo.]	Having.
Avido.]	Had.

Indicative

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo estóy, } yo soy. Tu estás, } tu eres. El está, } aquél es. Plur. Nosotros estamos, } Nosotros somos Vosotros estáis, } Vosotros soys. Ellos están, } Aquellos són.	{ I am. Thou art. He is, &c.	Preter Plu- perfect.	Avía estado. Avías estado, Avía estado Avíamos estado, Aviadeys estado, Avían estado,	Avía. Avías. Avía. Avíamos. Aviadeys. Avían.	{ I had been, &c.	
Preter Im- perfect.	Estaba, Estabas, Estaba, Estábamos, Estavadeys, Estaban,	{ Éra. Éras. Éra. Éramos. Éradeys. Éran.	{ I was, &c.	First Fu- ture.	Estaré, Estarás, Estará, Estarémos, Estaréys, Estarán,	Seré. Serás. Será. Serémos. Seréys. Serán.	{ I shall or will be.
First Pret. Perfect.	Estuve, Estuviste, Estuvo, Estuvimos, Estuvisteys, Estuvieron,	{ Fuí. Fuiste. Fue. Fuimos. Fuisteys. Fuéron.	{ I have been, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	He, o tengo de estar, As de estar, A de estar, Avémos de estar, Aveys de estar, An de estar,	Ser. Ser. Ser. Ser. Ser. Ser.	{ I shall or will, &c.
2d Preter Perfect.	He estado, As estado, A estado, Aveamos estado, Avéis estado, Han estado.	{ He, or úve. ás, or uviste. á, or úvo. Avémos, or uvimos. Avéys, or uvisteys. án, or uvieron.	{ I have been. &c.				

Imperative Mood.

Está, Esté, Estemos, Estad, Estén,	sé, tu, or sey tu. séa aquel. seámos nosotros. sed vosotros. séan aquellos.	Be thou, Be he or let him be, &c.
--	---	--------------------------------------

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Cómo.	Esté, Estés, Esté, Estemos, Estéys, Estén,	séa. séas. séa. seámos. seáys. séan.	When I am, &c.
Imperf. Cómo.	Estuviéra, estuviéssé, Estuviéras, estuviésses, Estuviéra, estuviéssé, Estuviéramos, estuviéssémos, Estuviéradeys, estuviéssedeys, Estuviéran, estuviéssen,	fuéra, sería, fuéssé. fuéras sería, fuésses. fuéra, sería, fuéssé. fuéramos, seríamos, fuéssémos. fuéradeys, seríadeys, fuéssedeys. fuéran, serían, fuéssen.	When I was.
Preter Perf. Cómo.	Aya estado, Ayas estado, Aya estado, Ayámos estado, Ayáys estado, Ayan estado,	áya. áyas. áyá. ayámo. ayáys. áyan.	Sido When I have been, &c.
Preter Plu. Perfect Cómo.	Uviéra, or uviéssé, As, or es, A, or e, Amos, or essemos Ades, or esedes, Eran, or esen estado,	uviéra, or uviéssé. uviéras, or uviésses. uviéra, or uviéssé. uviéramos, or uviéssémos. uviéradeys, or uviéssedeys. uviéran, or uviéssen.	Sido. When I had been, &c.
First Fu- ture Cómo.	Estuviére, Estuviéres, Estuviére, Estuviéremos, Estuviéredeys, Estuviéren,	fuére. fuéres. fuére. fuéremos. fuéredeys. fuéren.	When I have given, &c.
Second Fu- ture Cómo.	Avré estado, Avrás estado, Avrá estado, Avrémos estado, Avreys estado, Avran estado,	avré. avrás. avrá. avrémos. avréys. avrán.	Sido When I shall be, &c.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Estár, Sér,	{	Avér sido,] Avér de sér,]	To be.
Avér estado,			To have been.
Estando,]	{	siendo,]	To be hereafter.
Estado,]			Gerund.
			Being.
			Participle.
			Been.

Both these Verbs Estár and Sér, signify to be, but cannot be indifferently us'd, for (óy bueno, is am good, estóy bueno, I am well, Sér signifies the Natural Being, or existence, and estar denotes Place, as estar en Casa, to be at home, or some Adjunct Quality, as estar de buen aire, to be in a good Humour.

An Example of the First Conjugation of Verbs Regular in Ar, as Revelar, to reveal or discover.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ Yo Revelo, tu Revelas, aquel revéla, revelámos, reveláys, Revelán.	{ I reveal, Thou revealest, &c.	Preter Plu. Perfect.	{ Avía, avías, avíamos, aviadeys, avian.	{ reve- lado.	{ I had re- vealed, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	{ Reveláva, revelavas, reveláva, revelávamos, revelávadeys, revelávan.	{ I did re- veal, &c.	First Future.	{ revelaré, revelarás, revelará, reveláremos, revelaréys, revelarán,		{ I shall or will reveal, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	{ Revelé, revelálte, reveló, revelámos, revelálteys, reveláron.	{ I have re- vealed, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	{ Hé, o téngo de revelár, as de revelár, a de revelár, (velár, Hémos, o avémos de re- aveis de revelár, an de revelár.		{ I am to, or must reveal, &c.
Second Pre- ter Perfect.	{ Hé, or úve, ás, or uviste, á, or úvo, avémos, or uvimos, avéys, or uvisteys, án, or uvieron.	{ revelá- do.				

Imperative Mood.

{ Revela tu, revéle aquél, Plur. revelémos nosotros, revelád vosotros, revelén aquellos.	{ Reveal thou, be thou revealed, &c.
---	---

Optative and Subjunctive Mood with Signs, Si, Como, Oxalá, Aunque.

Pres.	Yo revéle, tu Revéles. aquel Revéle. Plur. Revelémos, Reveléys, Revelén.	When I do re- veal, &c.	Pret. Plu- perfect.	uviéra, or uviéste. uviéras, or uviéste. uviéra, or uviéste. uviéramos, or uviéssemos. uviéradeys, or uviéssedeys uviéran, or uviéssen.	reve- lado.	When I had revealed.
Pret. Im- perfect.	Revelára, revelaríá, reveláste, Reveláras, revelarías, revelástes, Revelára, revelaríá, revelástie, Reveláramos, revelaríamos, revelásemos, Reveláradeys, revelaríadeys, revelástedeys, Reveláran, revelarían, revelástien.	When I did reveal, &c.	First Fu- ture.	Revelaré, Reveláres, Revelaré, Reveláremos. Reveláredeys, Reveláren.		When I shall or will reveal &c.
Preter Perfect.	áya. áyas. áya. ayámos. ayáys. ayan.	Reveládo.	When I have revealed, &c.	Second Future.	Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrés, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.	When I shall or will have re- veal, &c.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Revelár,] To reveal or discover.

Preterperfect Tense.

Aver reveládo,] To have reveal'd.

The Future Tense.

Avér o Esperár
de Revelár, } To reveal
hereafter.

Gerund.

Reveládo, Revealing.

Supine of the Active Signification.

A Revelár,] To be about to Reveal.

Supine of the Passive Signification.

De sér Revelado,] To be Reveal'd.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que Revéla,] Revealing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Reveládo,] Reveal'd.

All Verbes which have their Infinitives in Ar, are declin'd in all Points like this, except the Irregulars following in Ar.

An Example of the Second Conjugation of Verbs Regular in Er, as Entender, to understand.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Entiendo, tu Entiendes, aquel Entiende. Plur. Entendemos, Entendéys, Entienden.	I do under- stand, &c.	Preter Plus Perf. Tense.	Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, aviadeys, avian.	entendi- do.	I had un- derstood, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	Entendía, Entendías, Entendía. Entendíamos, Entendiadeys, Entendían.	I did under- stand, &c.	Future.	Entendere, Entenderas, Entendera. Entenderémos, Entenderéys, Entenderán.		I shall or will understand.
First Preter Perfect.	Entendí, Entendiste, Entendió, Entendimos, Entendisteys, Entendieron.	I have under- stood, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	Hé, o téngo de entender, as de entender, a de entender, Hémos, de entender, aveis de entender, an de entender.		I am to, or must under- stand, &c.
Second Pre- ter Perfect.	Hé, or úve, ás, or uviste, á, or úvo, hémos, or uvimos, avéys, or uvisteys, án, or uvieron.	entendi- do.				I have un- derstood, &c.

Imperative Mood.

Entiende tu, Entiende aquel, Entendámos nosótro, Entended vosótro, Entiendan aquéllos,	Understand thou, Understand he, or let him understand.
--	---

Second Conjugation of Regular Verbs in Er, as Entender.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	Yo Entiéndas. tu entiéndas, aquel entiéndas, entendámos, entendáys, entiéndan.	Plur.	{	When I do understand, &c.	Pret. Plu- perfect.	{	uviéra, or uviéste. uviéras, or uviéstes. uviéra, or uviéste. uviéramos, or uviésemos. uviéradeys, or uviéssedeys. uviéran, or uviéssen.	{	enten- dido.	{	When I had under- stood.
Pret. Im- perfect. Como.	{		{	When I did understand.	First Fu- ture. Como.	{	Entendiere, entendieres, entendiere, entendieremos, entendiereys, entendieren.	{	When I shall or will under- stand, &c.		
Preter Perfect. Como.	{		{	When I have understood, &c.	Second Future. Como.	{	Uviere, or auré, uviéres, or aurás, uviere, or aurá, uviéremos, or aurémos, uviéredeys, or auréys, uviéren, or aurán.	{	enten- dido.	{	When I shall under- stand, &c.

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Entender,] To understand.

Preterperfect Tense.

Aver entendido,] To have understood.

The Future Tense.

Avér o Esperár { To understand
de entender, { hereafter.

Gerund.

Entendiendo,] Understanding.

Supines of the Active Voice.

A entender,] To understand.

Supine of the Passive Voice.

De sér entendido,] To be understood.

Participle of the Active Voice and Present Tense.

El que entiende,] Understanding.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Entendido,] Understood.

All Verbs whose Infinitives end in Er, are in all Points declin'd like this, except the Irregulars in Er following.

An Example of the Third and last Conjugation of Regular Verbs in Ir or Yr,
as Abrir, to open, Oyr, to Hear.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{	O'yo, or O'go, óyes, óye. o'ymos. o'ys, o'yen.	Plur.	{	I do hear, &c.	Preter Plu- Perf. Tense.	{	Avia, avias, avía, aviamos, aviadeys, avian.	{	Oydo.	{	I had heard.
Preter Im- perfect.	{	O'ya, o'yas. o'ya. O'amos, o'yadeys, o'yan.		{	I did hear, &c.	Future.	{	Oyré, oyras, oyrá, oyrémos, oyréys, oyrán.	{	I shall or will hear, &c.		
First Preter Perfect.	{	O'y, o'yste, oyó. O'ymos, o'ysteys, oyéron.		{	I have heard, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	{	Téngo, o hé de o'yr, as de o'yr, a de o'yr, Hémos, de o'yr, avéys de o'yr. an de o'yr.	{	I am to, or must hear.		
Second Pre- ter Perfect.	{	Hé, or úve, ás, or uviste, á, or úvo, ávemos, or uvimos, avéys, or uvisteys, án, or uvieron.		{	Oydo.	{	I had heard.					

Impe-

Imperative Mood.

{	Oye tu,	{	Hear thou,
	óya, or óya aquel,		Hear he or let him hear, &c.
	oygámos, or oyámos nosotros,		
	oyd vosotros,		
	óyan, or óyan aquellos,		

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	{	O'ya, or óya,	{	When I	Preterp'u- perfect Como.	{	Uviéra, or uviése,	{	When
		óya, or óyas,		hear.			Uviéras, or uviéses,		I had
		óya, or óya,					Uviéra, or uviése,		heard,
		oyámos, or oygámos,					Uviéramos, or uviésemos,		&c.
		oyáys, or oygáys,					Uviéradeys, or uviéssedeys,		
		óyan, or óyan.					Uviéran, or uviéssen.		
Preter Im- perfect Como.	{	Oyéra, oyría, oyése,	{	When I did	First Future Como.	{	Oyére,	{	When I
		oyéras, oyrias, oyéses,		hear, &c.			Oyéres,		shall
		oyéra, oyría, oyése.					Oyére,		hear, &c.
		oyéramos, oyriamos, oyésemos,					Oyéremos,		
		oyéradeys, oyriadeys, oyéssedeys,					Oyéredeys,		
		oyéran, oyrían, oyéssen.					Oyéren.		
Preter- perfect Como.	{	A'ya,	{	When I have	Second Future Como.	{	Uviére, or avré,	{	When I
		A'yas,		heard, &c.			Uviéres, or avrás,		shall
		A'ya,					Uviére, or avrá,		hear.
		Ayamos,					Uviéremos, or avrémos,		
		Ayáys,					Uviéredeys, or avréys,		
		A'yan.					Uviéren, or avrán.		

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Oír,] To hear.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Oído,] To have heard.

The Future Tense.

Avér de Oír,] To hear hereafter.

Gerund.

Oyendo,) Hearing.

Supine of the Active Voice.

A Oír,) To Hear.

Supine of the Passive Voice:

De ser Oído,) To be heard.

Participle of the Active Voice and Present Tense.

El que Oye,] Hearing.

Participle of the Passive Voice and Preter Tense.

Oído,] Heard.

All Verbs whose Infinitives end in ir, or yr, are declin'd in every Respect like this: Except those in ir and yr, in the Irregulars following.

Of Verbs Passives.

The Spaniards as the Italian and French decline their Verbs Passives, with their Verb Soy, es, fue, and the Participle of the Preter Tense, as of Revelár. to reveal: Soy Reveládo, I am reveal'd.
The Spanish form the Participle Passive of the First and Third Conjugation of their Infinitive Mood, by taking away r, and putting to do, as of Revelar, to reveal, Reveládo, Pedir, to require, Pedído, required, Oír, to hear, Oído, heard.
But in the Second Conjugation, they change er into ydo, or ido, as Leer, to read, Leydo: Entender, to understand, Entendído.

A Verb Passive is thus declin'd.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Sôy,	{ Revelado,	{ I am reveal'd.	Second Pre- ter Perfect.	Hé, or úve,	Sído,	{ Reve- lado.	{ I have been reve- al'd, &c.
	Tu és,				az, or uviste,	sído,		
	Aquél és,		Thou art re- veal'd, &c.		a, or úvo,	Sído,		
	Plur.				Hémos, or uvímos,	Sído,		
	Sómos,	{ Reveládos.			avéis, or uvístes,	Sído,	{ Reve- ládos.	
	Sóys,				an, or uvieron.	Sído,		
	Són.							
Preter Im- perfect.	E'ra,	{ Reveládo.	{ I was reveal'd	Preter Pluperf.	Avía,	Sído,	{ Reve- ládo.	{ I had been, &c.
	éras,				avías,	Sído,		
	éra,	avía,	Sído,					
	éramos,	avíamos,	Sído,		{ Reve- ládos.			
éradays,	aviadeys,	Sído,						
	éran.	{ Reveládos.	{ Thou wast re- veal'd, &c.		avian.	Sído,		
First Preter Perfect.	Fúy,	{ Reveládo.	{ I have been reveal'd, &c.	Future,	Seré,	{ Reveládo.	{ I shall or will be reveal'd.	
	Fuiste,				Serás,			
	Fué,	Será,						
	Fuýmos,	Serémos,			{ Reveládos.			
	Fuístes,	Seréys,						
	Fuéron.	Serán.						

Imperative Mood.

{ Sé tu, se a aquél,	{ Revelado.	{ Be thou reveal'd.
{ Seámos, Séd, Séan.	{ Revelados.	{ Let him be reveal'd.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	{ Yo Séa, Tu Séas, Aquél séa, Seamos, Seáys, Séan.	{ Revelado. Revelados.	{ When I am re- veal'd, &c.	Preter Pluper- fect Ten- se Como.	{ Uviéra, or uviésse, uviéras, or uviésse, uviéra, or uviésse, uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviéradeys, or uviéſſedeys, uviéran, or uviéſſen.	{ Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído,	{ reve- lado. reve- lados.	{ When I had been reveal'd, &c.
Preter perfect Como.	{ Fuéra, sería, fuésse, Fuéras, serías, fuésſes, Fuéra, sería, fuésſe, Fuéramos, seríamos, fuéſſemos, Fuéradeys, seríadeys, fuéſſedeys, Fuéran, serían, fuéſſen.	{ reve- lado. reve- lados.	{ When I was re- veal'd, &c.	Future Como.	{ Fuére, or uviére, or avré, fuéres, or uviéres, or avras, fuére, or uviéres, or avra, fuéremos, or uviéremos, or avrémos, fuéredeys, or uviéredeys, or avréys, fuéren, or uviéren, or avrán.	{ Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído,	{ reve- lado. reve- lados.	{ When I shall be re- veal'd &c.
Preter perfect Como.	{ A'ya. áyas. áya. ayámos. ayáys. áyam.	{ Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído, Sído,	{ Revelado. Revelados.	{ When I have been reveal'd, &c.				

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Ser Revelado,] To be reveal'd.

Preter Tense.

Avér Sído Revelado,] To have been reveal'd.

The Future Tense.

Avér de Sér Revelado,] To be reveal'd hereafter.

Participle of the Present Tense.

Lo que es Revelado,] That which is reveal'd.

Participle of the Future Tense.

Lo que ha de sér Revelado,] To be reveal'd hereafter.

That the Conjugation in every Respect, all other Verbs Passives, Regular or Irregular of what Conjugation soever, are to be declined in the second Conjugation, Soy, Vendido, Poseído, Defendido, and of the Third Conjugation, as Soy, Oído, Comido, &c. and so of the rest.

Note that the Copulative Case Se of the Pronoun join'd with the Third Person of Verbs Active, makes them have the same Signification, as Dize, he said, se dize, it is said.

Here follow the Verbs Irregular, which being comprehended under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

The First Conjugation of Verbs Irregular in Ar, as Dar to Give.

The Verbs Irregular like the Regular divided into Three Conjugations, the First in Ar, the Second in Er, the Third in Ir, or Yr.

The Verbs Irregular differ from the Regular afore going in their First Preterperfect of the Indicative, and Preterimperfect of the Subjunctive, as by the Examples following you may see.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Doy, tu Das, Aquél Da. Plur. Dámos, Dáys, Dán.	I do give, &c.	Pluperf.	Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, aviadeys, avian.	Dádo.	I had given, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	Dáva, Dávas, Dáva, Dávamos, Dávadeys, Dávan.	I did give, &c.	Future.	Daré, Darás, Dara, Darémos, Daréys, Darán.		I shall or will give, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Dí, Díste, Díó, Dímos, Díteys, Dieron.	I have given, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	Hé, or téngo, de dar. as de dar, a de dar, Hémos, or avémos de dar avéys de dar. an de dar.		I am to, or must give, &c.
Second Pre- ter Perfect.	Yo Hé, Tu ás, Aquél á, Hémos, Aveys, A'n.	Dádo.	I have given, &c.			

Imperative Mood.

Dá tu, Dé aquél, Démos, Dad, Dén.	Give thou, &c.

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	Yo De, Tu Des, Aquél De, Démos, Déys, Dén.	When I do &c.	Pret. Plu- perfect. Como.	uviéra, or uviéste. uviéras, or uviéstes. uviéra, or uviéste. uviéramos, or uviésemos. uviéradeys, or uviéredeys. uviéran, or uviénen.	Dádo.	When I had given, &c.
Preter Imperfect. Como.	Diéra, daría, diéste, Diéras, darías, diéste, Diéra, daría, diéste, Diéramos, daríamos, diésemos, Diéradeys, daríadeys, diéredeys, Diéran, darían, diénen.	When I did give, &c.	Future. Como.	Diére, diéres, diére, diéremos, diéredeys, diéren.		When I shall give, &c.
Preterperfect. Como.	aya. ayas. aya. ayámos, ayays. ayan.	Dádo.	When I have given, &c.	uviére, dádo. uviéres, dádo, uviére, dádo, uviéramos, dádo, uviéredeys, dádo, uviénen, dádo.		When I shall have given, &c.

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Dár,] To give.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Dado,] To have given.

Gerund.

Dando,] Giving.

Participle of the Preter Tense, and Active Voice.

El que da,] Giving.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dado,] Given.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de dár,) To give hereafter.

These here under written only, differ from the Regular Verbs in the First Preterperfect Tense of their Indicative Mood, which always changes Car of the Infinitive into Qué, and Gar into Gue, as

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Acercár, To come near,	Yo Acérco,	Acerqué.
Cercar, to compass,	yo Cércó,	Cerqué.
Cargár, to charge, to burden,	yo Cárco,	Cargué.
Achicár, to make little,	yo Achíco,	Achiqué.
Ahogár, to choke, to drown.	yo Ahógo,	Ahogué.
Allegár, to come near,	yo Allégo,	Allegué.
Ahorcár, to hang up,	yo Ahórco,	Ahorqué.
Anegár, to drown,	yo Anégo,	Anegué.
Arrancár, to pluck up,	yo Arranco,	Arranqué.
Arremangar, to tuck up,	yo Arremángo,	Arremangué.
Arriescár, to endanger,	yo Arrísco,	Arriesqué.
Apesgar, to weigh or press down,	yo Apésco,	Apesgué.
Asulcar, to furrow,	yo Asúlco,	Asulqué.
Bogar, to row,	yo Bógo,	Bogué.
Castigar, to chastise,	yo Castígo,	Castigué.
Calcár, to kick under feet,	yo Cáico,	Calqué.
Cavalgar, to ride,	yo Caválgo,	Cavalgué.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preterperfects.
Embarcár, To embark,	Yo Embarco.	Embarqué.
Desligár, to untie,	yo Deslígo,	Desligué.
Embaucár, to make a Fool of.	yo Embauco,	Embauqué.
Embocar, to enter in at.	yo Embóco,	Emboqué.
Enarcár, to arch,	yo Enárco,	Enarqué.
Divulgár, to publish,	yo Divúlgo,	Divulgué.
Empegár, to pitch,	yo Empégo,	Empegué.
Fabricár, to frame, or build,	yo Fabríco,	Fabriqué.
Mancár, to lame,	yo Máncó,	Manqué.
Marcár, to mark,	yo Marco,	Marqué.
Mercar, to buy,	yo Mércó,	Merqué.
Maslar, to chop,	yo Máico,	Masqué.
Mendigar, to beg,	yo Mendigo,	Mendigué.
Navegar, to sail,	yo Navégo,	Navegué.
Otorcár, to gild,	yo Otórgo,	Otorgué.
Pelliscar, to touch,	yo Pellísco,	Pellisqué.
Pagar, to pay,	yo Págo,	Pagué.
Pescar, to fish,	yo Péico,	Pesqué.

These here above and their like in all other Tenses, vary nothing from the Verbs Regular in as afore going, as Juzgár, to judge, the Indicative Present Tense Juzgo, I judge, Preterimperfect Juzgava, first Preterperfect Juzgué, the Second Perfect He juzgó, the Imperfect Juzgaba, first Preterperfect Avía juzgado, Future Juzgaré. Imperative Júzga. The Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Ojalá, or Si júzgue, the Preterimperfect Tense, Juzgára, Juzgaría, Juzgáse, Perfect A'ya juzgado, Imperfect Juzgara, or Juzgáse juzgado, Future Juzgaré. Infinitive Juzgár. Participle Juzgado.

Example

Example of the Irregular Verb, of the First Conjugation, Almorzar,
to Breakfast.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ Almuérzo, Almuézas, Almuéza, Almorzámos, Almorzáis, Almuérzan.	{ I Breakfast, You Breakfast, He Breakfasts, We Breakfast, Ye Breakfast, They Breakfast,	Preterplu- perfect.	{ Avía almorzado, Avías almorzado, Avía almorzado, Avíamos almorzado, Aviadéys almorzado, Avían almorzado.	{ I had break- fasted, &c.
Preter Im- perf.	{ Almorzáva, Almorzávas, Almorzáva, Almorzávamos, Almorzávais, or Almorzávadeis, Almorzávan.	{ I did Breakfast. You did, &c.	First Future.	{ Almorzaré, Almorzarás, Almorzara, Almorzaremos, Almorzaréys, Almorzarán.	{ I will or shall break- fast. You will, or shall, &c.
Preter Perfect.	{ Almorzé, Almorzáste, Almorzó, Almorzámos, Almorzásteys, Almorzáron.	{ I have Break- fasted, &c.	Second Future.	{ Hicé, or tengo de almorzár, As de almorzár, A de almorzár, (morzár, Hémos, or avémos de al- Aveís de almorzár, An de almorzár.	{ I am to, or must break fast. You are to, or must, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	{ Hé Almorzado, As Almorzado, A Almorzado, Hémos, or avémos almorzado, Aveís almorzado, An Almorzado.	{ I have break- fasted, You have, &c.			

Imperative Mood.

{ Almuérza, Almuérze, Almorzémos, Almorzad, Almuércen.	{ Do you Breakfast, Let him Breakfast, &c.
--	---

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Si, Cómo, Oxála, Aunque.

Pres.	{ Yo, Almuérze, Tu Almuérzes, El Almuérze, Almorcémos, Almorcéis, Almuércen. }	{ If, when, would to God I Breakfast. If when, would to God you, &c. }
Preter Im- perfect.	{ Almorzára, Almorzaría, or Almorzáste, Almorzáras, Almorzarías, or Almorzáste, Almorzára, Almorzaría, or Almorzáste, Almorzaramos, Almorzariamos, or Almorzástemos, Almorzáriadeys, Almorzariadeys, or Almorzástedeys, Almorzaran, Almorzarian, or Almorzástén. }	{ If, when, would to God I did Breakfast. If, when, would to God you, &c. }
Preter- perfect.	{ A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan. } Almorzádo.	{ If, when, would to God I have Breakfasted, If, when, would to God you, &c. }
Preterplu- perfect.	{ Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéras, or uviéste, Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéramos, or uviéstemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéstedeys, Uviéran, or uviéstén. } Almorzádo.	{ If, when, would to God I had Breakfasted. If, when, would to God you had, &c. }
First Future.	{ Almorzare, Almorzares, Almorzarc, Almorzaremos, Almorzaredeys, Almorzaten. }	{ If, when, God grant, I shall or will Breakfast; If, when, God grant you, &c. }
Second Future.	{ Uviére, or avré, Uviéres, or avrés, Uviére, or avrá, Uviéremos, or avrémos, Uviéredeys, or avréys, Uviéren, or avrán. } Almorzádo.	{ If, when, God grant I shall or will have Break- fasted, &c. }

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Almorzár,] *To Breakfast.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Almorzado,] *To have Breakfasted.*

The Future Tense.

Avér o Esperár de Almorzár,] *To be to Breakfast hereafter.*

Gerund.

Almorzando,] *Breakfasting.*

Participle of the Present Tense Active.

El que Almuérza,] *Breakfasting.*

Participle of the Preter Tense Passive.

Almorzado,] *Breakfasted.*

The following Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation, in Ar, are all conjugated after this manner, as are all deriv'd from them.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Preterperf.</i>	<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Preterf.</i>
Bolcár, <i>to overturn,</i>	Buélco,	Bolqué,	Desfogár, <i>to cool,</i>	Desfuégo,	Desfogué,
Colgár, <i>to hang,</i>	Cuélgo,	Colgué,	Holgár, <i>to be idle,</i>	Huélgo,	Holgué,
Cocár, <i>to make Faces,</i>	Cuéco,	Coqué,	Jugár, <i>to play,</i>	Juégo,	Jugué,
Derrocár, <i>to throw down,</i>	Derruécce,	Derroqué,	Provar, <i>to prove,</i>	Provéo,	Prové,
Descolgár, <i>to unhang,</i>	Descuélgo,	Descolgué,	Sonar, <i>to sound,</i>	Suéno,	Soné,
Contár, <i>to count,</i>	Cuénto,	Conté,	Atronár, <i>to thunder,</i>	Atruécno,	Atroné,
Destollar, <i>to flea,</i>	Destuéllo,	Destollé,	Degollár, <i>to behead,</i>	Deguéllo,	Degollé,
Resollar, <i>to breathe,</i>	Resuéllo,	Resollé,	Hollar, <i>to trample,</i>	Huéllo,	Hollé,
Rogár, <i>to intreat,</i>	Ruégo,	Rogué,	Renovar, <i>to renew,</i>	Renuévo,	Renové,
Acordar, <i>to agree,</i>	Acuérdco,	Acordé,	Consolar, <i>to comfort,</i>	Consuélo,	Consolé,
Mostrar, <i>to show,</i>	Moéstro,	Mostré,	Soltár, <i>to let loose,</i>	Suélto,	Solté,
Esforzár, <i>to strengthen,</i>	Esfuérzco,	Esforcé,	Trocár, <i>to change,</i>	Truéco,	Troqué,
Amolar, <i>to whet,</i>	Amuélo,	Amolé,	Regoldár, <i>to beich,</i>	Reguéldo,	Regoldé,
Alolár, <i>to destroy.</i>	Aluélo,	Alolé,	Encontrar, <i>to meet,</i>	Encuéntro,	Encontré,
Volár, <i>to fly,</i>	Buélo,	Volé,	Forzár, <i>to force.</i>	Fuércço,	Forcé.
Apostar, <i>to wager.</i>	Apuécsto,	Aposté.			

As these above change the o, in the Penultima, into ue, so do those that follow change the e in the Penultima into ie, in the present Tense of the Indicative Mood, the Second and Third Persons Singular, and the Third Person Plural of the Imperative, the Present Tense of the Optative, and Subjunctive, and the Participle Active. They are these

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Preterperf.</i>	<i>Infinit.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Preterperf.</i>
Negar, <i>to deny,</i>	Négo,	Negué,	Sentár, <i>to sit,</i>	Siécno,	Senté,
Encenagar, <i>to bewitch,</i>	Encuécago,	Encenagué,	Cegar, <i>to grow blind,</i>	Ciégo,	Cegué,
Fregar, <i>to rub,</i>	Fuégco,	Fregué,	Cerrar, <i>to shut,</i>	Ciérrco,	Cerré,
Phagar, <i>to play,</i>	Phuégco,	Phagué,	Enterrar, <i>to bury,</i>	Entiérrco,	Enterré,
Repar, <i>to repair,</i>	Ruégco,	Ragué,	Desterrar, <i>to banish,</i>	Destiérrco,	Desterré,
Enteñir, <i>to make light,</i>	Entuécio,	Enteñié,	Segár, <i>to mow,</i>	Siégco,	Segué,
Temblar, <i>to quake,</i>	Tuécblco,	Temblé,	Tentár, <i>to feel,</i>	Tiéntco,	Tenté,
Tropicar, <i>to change,</i>	Tropuécce,	Tropecé,	Despertár, <i>to awake,</i>	Despiécrtco,	Desperté,
Merendar, <i>to dine,</i>	Meruécdo,	Merendé,	Confessar, <i>to confess,</i>	Confiéccto,	Confessé,
Aparar, <i>to save,</i>	Apuécdo,	Aparé,	Alercár, <i>to fear,</i>	Aluécrtco,	Alerré,
Empezar, <i>to begin,</i>	Empuéczo,	Empezé,	Remendar, <i>to mend,</i>	Remuécndo,	Remendé,
Comenzar, <i>to begin,</i>	Comuéczo,	Comenzé,	Recomendar, <i>to recommend,</i>	Recomuécndo,	Recomendé,

The Irregular Verb, of the First Conjugation, in Ar, Andár, to Go.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ A'ndo, Andas, A'nda, Andámos, Andays, A'ndan.	{ I go, Thou goest, &c.	Preterplu- perfect.	{ Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíadeys, Avían.	{ Andádo.	{ I had gone, &c.
Preter Im- perf.	{ Andáva, Andavas, Andáva, Andávamos, Andávadeys, Andávan.	{ I did go, &c.	First Future.	{ Andaré, Andarás, Andará, Andarémos, Andaréys, Andaran.		{ I shall or or will go, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	{ Andúve, Anduviste, Andúvo, Anduvimos, Anduvisteys, Anduviéron.	{ I have gone, &c.	Second Future.	{ Hé, or téngo de andár, As de andár, A de andár, Hémos de andár, Avéys de andár, An de andár.		{ I am to, or must go, You are to, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	{ Hé, As, A, Hémos, Avéys, A'n.	{ Andádo.				{ I have gone, &c.

Imperative Mood.

{ A'nda tu, A'nde aquel, Andémos, Andád, A'nden.	{ Go thou, &c.
--	----------------

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Si, Cómo, Quando, Oxalá, If, when, God grant.

Pres.	{ A'nde, ándes, ánde, Andémos, Andéys, anden.		{ When I do go, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	{ Anduviéra, Andaría, Anduviélla, Anduviéras, Andarías, Anduviéllés, Anduviéra, Andaría, Anduviélla, Anduviéramos, Andaríamos, Anduviéllémos, Anduviéradeys, Andaríadeys, Anduviéllédeys, Anduviéran, Andarían, Anduviéllen.		{ When I did go, &c.
Preter- perfect.	{ A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayamos, Ayáys, A'yan.	{ Andádo.	{ When I have gone, &c.
Preterplu- perfect tense.	{ Uviéra, or uviélla, Uviéras, or uviéllés, Uviéra, or uviélla, Uviéramos, or uviéllémos, Uviéradeys, or uviéllédeys, Uviéran, or uviéllen.	{ Andádo.	{ When I have gone, &c.
First Future.	{ Anduviére, Anduviéres, Anduviére, Anduviéremos, Anduviéredeys, Anduviéren.		{ When I had gone, &c.
Second Future.	{ Uviére, or avré, Uviéres, or avrás, Uviére, or avrá, Uviéremos, or avrémos, Uviéredeys, or avréys, Uviéren, or avrán.	{ Andádo.	{ When I shall or will go, &c.

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Andár,] To go.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér andado,] To have gone.

Future Tense.

Avér, or esperar de andár,] To go, or about to go.

Gerund.

Andádo,] Going.

Participle of the Preter Tense, and Active Voice.

El que anda,] One Going.

Participle of the Preter and Passive Voice.

Andado,] Gone.

Of Verbs Regular of the Second Conjugation in Er, as Respondér,
To Answer.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ Respóndo, Respóndes, Respónde, Respondémos, Respondéys, Responden.	{ I Answer, You Answer, &c.	Preterplu- perfect.	{ Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Aviadeys, Avían.	{ Respon- dido.	{ I had answe- red, You had &c.
Preter Im- perf.	{ Respondía, Respondías, Respondía, Respondíamos, Respondíadeys, or Respondíays, Respondían.	{ I did Answer, You did, &c.	First Future.	{ Responderé, Responderás, Responderá, Responderémos, Responderéys, Responderán.		{ I will or shall Answer, You will, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	{ Respondí, Respondíste, Respondió, Respondimos, Respondíteys, Respondiéron.	{ I have or did Answer. You, &c.	Second Future.	{ Hé, or téngo de respondér, As de respondér, A de respondér, Hémos, or avémos de respondér, Avéys de respondér, An de respondér.		{ I am to, or must answer, You are, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	{ Hé, respondído, As, respondído, A respondído, Hémos, or avémos respondído, Avéys respondído, An respondído.	{ I have answer'd you, &c.				

Imperative Mood.

{ Respónde, Respónda, Respondámos, Respondéd, Respondan.	{ Do you Answer, Let him Answer, &c.
--	---

Optative

Optative and Subjunctive Moods, Quando, Oxalá, &c. When God grant.

<i>Pres.</i>	Respónda, , Respóndas, Respónda, Respondámos, Respondáys, Respónda.	} } } } } }	<i>When, God grant, &c. I do Answer.</i> <i>When God grant, &c. You do, &c.</i>
<i>Preter Im- perfect.</i>	Respondiera, or respondiése, Respondieras, or respondiéses, Respondiera, or respondiése, Respondiéramos, or Respondiésemos, Respondierays, Respondiéradeys, or Respondiessedéys, Respondieran, or Respondiessen.	} } } } } }	<i>When, God grant, &c. I did Answer;</i> <i>You did, &c.</i>
<i>Preter perfect.</i>	A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	} } } } } }	Respondido. <i>When, God grant, &c. I have answer'd.</i> <i>You have, &c.</i>
<i>Preter Pluperfect.</i>	Uviéra, or uviése, uviéras, or uviéses, uviéra, or uviése, uviéramos, or uviésemos, uviérays, or uviésseys, uviéran, or uviessen.	} } } } } }	Respondido. <i>When, God grant, &c. I had answer'd.</i> <i>You had, &c.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Respondiere, Respondieres, Respondiere, Respondiéremos, Respondierédeys, Respondiéren	} } } } } }	<i>When, or God grant, &c. I shall or will answer, &c.</i> <i>You shall, &c.</i>
<i>Second Fu- ture.</i>	Uviére, uviéres, uviére, uviéremos, uviéredeys, uviéren.	} } } } } }	Respondido. <i>When, or God grant, &c. I shall or will have answer'd.</i> <i>You shall, &c.</i>

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Respondér,]	To answer.
<i>Preterperfect Tense.</i>	
Avér respondido,]	To have answer'd.
<i>The Future Tense.</i>	
Avér de respondér,]	To be to answer.
<i>Gerund.</i>	
Respondiéndo,)	Answering.
<i>Participle Passive.</i>	
Respondido]	Answer'd.)

All other Regular Verbs of the Second Conjugation in er, are Conjugated after the same manner, as Corré, to run, Comer, to eat, &c.

Of Verbs Irregular of the Second Conjugation in Er, as Traér, Sabér, Tenér, Podér, Quérer, Ponér, Hazér, Cabér, Vér. And First of Traér.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Tráigo, Tu traes, Aquél trae. traémos, traéys, traén.	{ I fetch or bring, &c.	Second Pre- ter Perfect.	{ Hé, as, &c.	{ traydo.	{ I have fetcht or brought, &c.
				Plupreter Perfect.	{ Avía, Avías, &c.	
					{ traydo,	
Preter Im- perfect.	Traya, trayás, traya, trayamos, trayadeys, trayan.	{ I did fetch or bring, &c.	First Future.	{ Traeré, traerás, traerá, traerémos, traeréys, traerán.	{ I shall or will fetch, or bring, &c.	
First Preter Perfect.	Trúxe, or tráxe, truxiste, or traxiste, trúxo, or tráxo, Truximos, or traximos, truxisteys, or traxisteys, truxéron, or traxéron.	{ I have fetcht or bought, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	{ Hé, or téngo de traer. as de traer, a de traer, Hémos de traer, avéys de traer, an de traer.	{ I am to or must bring, You are, &c.	

Imperative Mood.

{ Tráe tu, tráyga aquél, traémos, traéd, tráygan.	{ Bring or fetch thou, &c.
--	-------------------------------

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	Tráyga, Traygas, Tráyga, Traygámos, Traygáys, Traygan.	{ When I do fetch, or bring, &c.	Preterplu- perfect.	{ Uviéira, or uviéisse, Uviéiras, or uviéisses, Uviéira, or uviéille, Uviéramos, or uviéísemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéílledeys, Uviéran, or uviéíssen.	{ Tray- do.	{ When I had brought or fetcht, &c.
Preter Im- perfect Como.	Truxéra, traería, truxéisse, Truxéras, traerías, truxéíssen, Truxéra, traería, truxéisse, Truxéramos, traeríamos, truxéísemos, Truxéradeys, traeríadeys, truxéílledeys, Truxéran, traerían, truxéíssen.	{ When I did fetch or bring, &c.	First Future.	{ Truxére, Truxéres, Truxére, Truxéremos, Truxéredeys, Truxéren.	{ When I shall bring or fetch, &c.	
Preter- perfect Como.	A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáyys, A'yan.	{ Traydo.	Second Future.	{ Uviére, or avré, traydo. Uviéres, or avrás traydo, Uviére, or avrá traydo, Uviéremos, or avrémos traydo, Uviéredeys, or avréys traydo, Uviéren, or avrán traydo.	{ Tray- do.	{ When I may or shall have brought. When you, &c.

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Traér,] To bring, to fetch.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Traydo,] To have brought.

Future Tense.

Avér or Esperár de traer,] To bring hereafter.

Gerund.

Trayéndo,] Bringing or fetching.

Participle of the Active and Preter Tense.

Traydo,] Brought.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de Traér,] About to bring or fetch.

This same manner of Conjugation, to be follow'd in all Verbs compounded of Traér, as, Retraér, to draw back, &c

These

These Verbs following ending in cer, in the First Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, the Third Singular, and First and Third Plural of the Imperative, and throughout all Persons, and both Numbers of the Optative and Conjunctive Moods, have an s, added before the c, in the last Syllable, in all other Respects, they are Regulars of the Second Conjugation in er.

Infinitives.

Pres.

Preter.

Acaecér, to happen,
Acontecér, idem.
Adolecér, to grow sick,
Agradecér, to give thanks,
Amortecér, to swoon,
Desfallecér, idem.
Apetecér, to desire,
Crecér, to grow,
Encallecér, to wax hard as Brawn,
Encarecér, to magnify,
Empecér, to hinder,
Establecér, to establish,
Fenecér, to finish,
Pacér, to feed,
Perécér, to perish,
Compadecér, to have Compassion.
Conocér, to know,
Padecér, to suffer,
Ofrecér, to offer,
Guarnecér, to garnish,
Parecér, to appear,
Nacér, to be born,
Enflaquecér, to grow lean,
Enriquecér, to grow rich,
Empobrecér, to grow poor,
Endurecér, to grow hard.
Fallecér, To fail,
Engrandecér, to magnify,
Entristecér, to make sad,
Enoblecér, to ennoble,
Floreceér, to flourish,
Fortalecér, to strengthen,
Favorecér, to favour,
Obedecér, to obey,
Desvanecér, to make vain,
Ensobervecér, to grow proud,
Enmudecér, to grow dumb,
Envegecér, to grow old,
Establecér, to establish,
Pacér, to feed,
Merecér, to merit,

Yo acaéscó,
Yo acortéscó,
Yo adoléscó,
Yo agradéscó,
Yo amortéscó,
Yo desfallescó,
Yo apetéscó,
Yo créscó,
Yo encalléscó,
Yo encaréscó,
Yo empéscó,
Yo establescó,
Yo fenéscó,
Yo páscó,
Yo peréscó,
Compadéscó.
Conóscó,
Padéscó,
Ofreéscó,
Guarnéscó,
Paréscó,
Náscó,
Enflaqueéscó,
Enriqueéscó,
Empobreéscó,
Endureéscó.
Falléscó,
Engrandéscó,
Entristéscó,
Enobleéscó,
Floréscó,
Fortaléscó,
Favoreéscó,
Obedéscó,
Desvanéscó,
Ensobervéscó,
Enmudéscó,
Envegeéscó,
Estableéscó,
Páscó,
Meréscó,

Acaecí
Acontecí.
Adolecí
Agradecí.
Amortecí.
Desfallecí.
Apetecí.
Crecí.
Encallecí.
Encarecí.
Empecí.
Establecí.
Fenecí.
Pací.
Perecí.
Compadecí.
Conocí.
Padecí.
Ofrecí.
Guarnecí
Parecí.
Nací.
Enflaquecí.
Enriquecí.
Empobrecí.
Endurecí.
Fallecí.
Engrandecí.
Entristecí.
Enoblecí.
Florecí.
Fortalecí.
Favorecí.
Obedecí.
Desvanecí.
Ensobervecí.
Enmudecí.
Envegecí,
Establecí.
Pací.
Merací.

Except.

Vencér, To overcome,

Yo véngó,

Vencí.

In all other Moods and Tenses they are declin'd like the Verbs Regular of the Second Conjugation in Er.

These in ger, make their Present of the Indicative by changing g into j, the same in the Third Singular, and the First and Third Plural of the Imperative, and through all Persons, and both Numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods.

Infinitive.	Pres.	Preter.
Encoger, to shrink, Recoger, to gather, Acoger, to entertain, Escoger, to chuse out, Coger, to gather, Ungir, to annoint.	yo encójo, yo recojo, yo acójo, yo escójo, yo cójo, yo únjo.	Encogí. Recogí. Acogí. Escogí. Cogí. Ungí.

In other Moods and Tenses like the Regulars.

These make their Present Tense of the Indicative, by adding i in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive, and the same in the Second and Third Person Singular, and Third Plural of the Imperative, and throughout the present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

Infinitives.	Pres.	Preter.
Defender, to defend, Dehender, to cleave asunder, Cerner, to sift.	yo defiéndo, yo dehiéndo, Ciérno.	Defendí. Dehendí. Cerní.

And these make the Present Tense, by turning o in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into ue, the same in the Second and Third Person Singular, and the Third Plural of the Imperative, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

Bolvér, To turn, Rebolvér, to tumble, Solér, to be wont,	yo buélvo, yo rebuélvo, yo suélo,	Bolvi. Rebolví. Solí.
Cózer, to boile, Dolér, to grieve, Olér, to smell.	yo cuézo, yo duélo, yo huélo.	Cozí. Dolí. Oli.

And these following thus.

Caér, To fall, Roér, to gnaw, Valér, to be worth, Olér, to smell.	yo cáygo, yo róygo, yo válgo, yo huélo.	Caý. Roy. Valí. Oli.
--	--	-------------------------------

In like manner thorow all Moods, and Tenses are the Compounds of any of these Verbs conjugated.

The Irregular Verb Sabér, to know.

Pres.	Yo Sé, Tu Sabes, Aquél Sábe. Sabémos, Sabéys, Sáben.	I know, Thou knowst.	Preter Pluperfect.	Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíadeys, avían.	Sabido.	I had known, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	Sabía, Sabías, Sabía, Sabíamos, Sabíadeys, Sabían.	I did know, &c.	First Future.	Sabré, Sabrás, Sabrá, Sabrémos, Sabréys, Sabrán.		I shall or will know, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Súpa, Supiste, Súpo, Supimos, Supíteys, Supieron.	I have known, &c.	Second Fu- ture.	Hé, or téngo de sabér. as de sabér, a de sabér, Hémos de sabér, avéys de sabér, an de sabér.		I am to know, You are &c.
Second Pre- ter Perfect.	Hé, as, a, Hémos, avéys, an.	Sabido.	I have known, &c.			

Imperative Mood.

Sábe tu, Sepa aquel, Sepámos, Sabéd, Sépan.	Know thou, &c.
---	----------------

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	Sépa, Sépas, Sépa, Sepámos, Sepáys, Sépan.	When I do know, &c.	Preterplu- perfect Como.	Uviéra, or uviéffe, Uviéras, or uviéffes, Uviéra, or uviéffe, Uviéramos, or uviéffemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéffedeys, Uviéran, or uviéffen.	Sabí- do.	When I had known, &c.
Preter Im- perfect Como.	Supiéra, fabría, supiéffe, Supiéras, fabrias, supiéffes, Supiéra, fabría, supiéffe. Supiéramos, fabríamos, supiéffemos, Supiéradeys, fabríadeys, supiéffedeys, Supiéran, fabrían, supiéffen.	When I did know, &c.	First Future Como.	Supiére, Supiéres, Supiére, Supiéremos, Supiéredeys, Supiéren.		When I shall know, &c.
Preter- perfect Como.	A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	When I have known, &c.	Second Future Como.	Uviére, or avré; Uviéres, or avrás, Uviére, or avrá, Uviéremos, or avrémos, Uviéredeys, or avréys, Uviéren, or avrán.	Sabí- do.	When I shall know, &c.

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Sabér,] To know.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Sabído,] To have known.

The Future Tense.

Avér, or esperar de Sabér,] To know hereafter.

Gerund.

Sabiendo,) Knowing.

Participle of the Present, and Active.

El que Sábe,] One Knowing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive.

Sabído,] Known.

The Irregular Verb Tener, to have, or to hold.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Téngo, Tu Tiénes, Aquél Tiéne, Tenémos, Tenécys, Tiénen.	I have or hold, &c.	Preterplu- perfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Aviadeys, Avían.	Tenído.	I had had, or held, &c.
Preter Im- perf.	Tenia, Tenías, Tenía, Teníamos, Teniadeys, Tenían.	I had or held, &c.	First Future.	Tendré, or Terné, Tendrás, or Ternás, Tendra, or Terná. Tendrémos, or Ternémos, Tendréys, or Ternéys, Tendrán, or ternán.		I shall or will have, or hold, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Túve, Tuviste, Túvo, Tuvimos, Tuvisteys, Tuvieron.	I had, or held, &c.	Second Future.	Hé, de tener, As de tener, A de tener, Hémos, de tener, Avéys de tener, An de tener.		I am to have, or hold You are, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	Yo Hé, Tu as, Aquél á, Hémos, Avéys, An,	Tenído.				I have had or held, &c.

Imperative Mood.

{ Ten tu,
Tenga aquél.
Tengámos,
Tengáys,
Tengan. } Have, or hold thou, &c.

Subjunctive

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	Ténga, Téngas, Ténga, Tengámos, Tengavs, Téngan.	When I do have, or hold, &c.	Preterp'n. perfect Como.	Uviéra, or uviéffe, Uviéras, or uviéffes, Uviéra, or uviéffe, Uviéramos, or uviéffemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéffedeys, Uviéran, or uviéffen.	Tenido.	When I had or held, &c.
Preter Imperfect Como.	Tuviéra, ternía, tuviéffe, Tuviéras, ternías, tuviéffes, Tuviéra, ternía, tuviéffe, Tuviéramos, terníamos, tuviéffemos, Tuviéradeys, terníadeys, tuviéffedeys, Tuviéran, ternían, tuviéffen.	When I did have, or hold, &c.	First Future Como.	Tuviére, Tuviéres, Tuviére, Tuviéremos, Tuviéredeys, Tuviéren.		When I shall or will have or hold, &c.
Preter-perfect Como.	A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayamos, Ayáys, A'yan.	When I have have or held,	Second Future Como.	Uviére, or avré, Uviéres, or avrás. Uviére, or avrá, Uviéremos, or avrémos, Uviéredeys, or avréys, Uviéren, or avrán.	Tenido.	When I shall or will hold &c.

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Tenér,] To have, or hold.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér tenído,] To have had or held.

Future Tense.

Avér de tenér,] To be to have or hold.

Gerund.

Teniendo,] Holding.

Participle of the Preter Tense, and Active.

El que tiéne,] One Holding.

Participle of the Preter and Passive.

Tenído,] Holden.

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all Points declin'd thro' all Moods and Tenses, as Manténér, to maintain yo Manténgo, Mantúve. Deténér, to detain or stay, yo Deténgo, Detúve. Reténér, to withhold or retain, yo Reténgo, Retúve. Sosténér, to sustain or uphold, yo Sosténgo, Sostúve.

The Irregular Verb Podér, to be able.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Puedo, Tu Puedes, Aquél Puede, Podémos, Podéys, Pueden.	I can or am able, &c.	Preterplu-perfect.	Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíadeys, Avían.	Podído.	I had been able, &c.
Preter Imperf.	Podía, Podías, Podías, Podíamos, Podíadeys, Podían.	I cou'd, or was able, &c.	First Future.	Podré, Podrás, Podrá, Podrémos, Podréys, Podrán.		I had been able, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Púde, Pudíste, Púdo, Pudimos, Pudístey, Pudieron.	I cou'd or have been able, &c.	Second Future.	Hé, or téngo de poder. As de poder, A de poder, Hémos de poder, Avéys de poder, An de poder.		I must or will be able, &c.
Second Preter perfect.	Hé, as, a, Hémos, Avéys, An,	I could or have been able, &c.				

Tho' it seems improper for this Word to have a Second Future of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative and most common will allow it neither, yet they are both in frequent use, and properly us'd.

Imperative

Imperative.

{	Puede tu,	{	Be thou able.
	Pueda el,		Be he able,
{	Podamos,	{	
	Podéd,		
	Puedan.		

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	<div><div>Puéda, Puedas, Pueda, Podámos, Podáys, Puedan.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I can or am able, &c.</div><div></div></div>	Preterplu- perfect Como.	<div><div>Uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviéradeys, or uviéssédeys, uviéran, or uviéssén.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>Podí- do.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I had been able, &c.</div><div></div></div>	
Preter Im- perf. Como.	<div><div>Pudiera, podría, pudiéssé, Pudieras, podrías, pudiésses, Pudiera, podría, pudiéssé, Pudiéramos, podríamos, pudiéssémos, Pudiéradeys, podriadeys, pudiéssédeys, Pudieran, podrian, pudiéssén.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I could or might be able, &c.</div><div></div></div>	First Future Como.	<div><div>Pudiere, Pudieres, Pudiere, Pudiéremos, Pudiéredeys, Pudieren.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I shall be able, here- after, &c.</div><div></div></div>		
Preter Per- fect Como.	<div><div>A'ya, áyas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>Podído.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I have been able, &c.</div><div></div></div>	Second Future Como.	<div><div>Uviére, or avré. uviéres, or avrás. uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>Podí- do.</div><div></div></div>	<div><div>When I shall or will be able, &c.</div><div></div></div>

Infinitive Mood Present Tense.

Podér,] To be able.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér podido,] To have been able.

Gerund.

Pudiendo,] Being able.

Participle.

Podido,] Able.

The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, to love, or to be willing.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ Yo Quiéro: tu Quiéres, aquel Quiére, Plur. Querémos, Queréys, Quiéren.	{ I will, or love, &c.	Preter Plu- perfect.	{ Avia, avias, avia, aviamos, aviadeys, avian.	{ Querido.	{ I had will'd, or I had lov'd, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	{ Quería, Querías, Quería, Queríamos, Queríadeys, Querían.	{ I did will, or I did love, &c.	First Future.	{ Querré, Querrás, Querrá, Querrémos, Querréys, Querrán.	{ I will, or shall will or love, &c.	
First Preter Perfect.	{ Quise, Quisiste, Quiso, Quisimos, Quisistey's, Quisieron.	{ I have will'd, or I have lov'd &c.	Second Future.	{ Hé, or tengo de querér, As de querér, A de querér, Hémos de querér, Avéys de querér, An de querér.	{ I am to or must love or will. You are, &c.	
Second Preter- perfect.	{ Hé, as, a, Hémos, or avémos, avéys, an,	{ Que- rido.	{ I have will'd or I have lov'd, &c.			

Imperative

Imperative.

<p>Quiére tu, Quiéra aquél,</p>	<p>Querámos, Queréd, Quiéran.</p>	<p>Will thou or love thou, &c.</p>
-------------------------------------	---	--

Subjunctive Mood.

<p>Pres. Como.</p>	<p>Quiéra, Quiéras, Quiéra, Querámos, Queráys, Quiéran.</p>	<p>When I will or love, &c.</p>	<p>Preterplu- perfect Como.</p>	<p>Uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviéradeys, or uviéssédeys, uviéran, or uviéssen.</p>	<p>Querido.</p>	<p>When I had will'd or lov'd, &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perf. Como.</p>	<p>Quisiéra, querría, quisiéssé, Quisiéras, querrías, quisiésses, Quisiéra, querría, quisiéssé, Quisiéramos, querríamos, quisiéssémos, Quisiéradeys, querríadeys, quisiéssédeys, Quisiéran, querrían, quisiéssen.</p>	<p>When I would or did love, &c.</p>	<p>First Future Como.</p>	<p>Quisiére, Quisiéres, Quisiére, Quisiéremos, Quisiéredeys, Quisiéren.</p>	<p>When I shall will or love, &c.</p>	
<p>Preter Per- fect Como.</p>	<p>A'ya, áyas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.</p>	<p>Querido.</p>	<p>When I have will'd or lov'd, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future Como.</p>	<p>Uviére, or avré. uviéres, or avrás. uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.</p>	<p>When I shall be willing or love, &c.</p>

Infinitive Mood Present Tense.

Querér,] To will or love.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Querido,] To have lov'd or been willing.

Gerund.

Queriendo,] Being willing or loving.

Participle.

Querido,] Lov'd, will'd.

Add to this Verb this Particle Mas, and so decline it through all Moods and Tenses, and it signifies, I had rather or I love more, as Mas quiére callár que hablár mal, I had rather be silent than talk amiss, Mas quiéro a Pédro que a Juán, I love Peter better than John.

The Irregular Verb Ponér, To put or place.

Indicative Mood.

<p>Pres.</p>	<p>Yo Pongo. tu Pones, aquel Pone, Plur. Ponémos, Ponéys, Ponen.</p>	<p>I do put, &c.</p>	<p>Preter plu- perfect.</p>	<p>Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, aviadeys, avian.</p>	<p>Puesto.</p>	<p>I had put, &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perfect.</p>	<p>Ponía, Ponías, Ponía, Poníamos, Poníadeys, Ponían.</p>	<p>I did put, &c.</p>	<p>First Future.</p>	<p>Poné, or Pondré, Ponás, or Pondrás, Poná, or Pondrá, Ponémos, or Pondrémos, Ponéys, or Pondréys, Ponán, or Pondrán.</p>	<p>I shall, or will put, &c.</p>	
<p>Enst Preter Perfect.</p>	<p>Púse, Pusiste, Púso, Pusimos, Pusisteys, Pusieron.</p>	<p>I have put, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future.</p>	<p>Hé, or téngo de ponér, As de ponér, A de ponér, Hémos de ponér, Avéys de ponér, An de ponér.</p>	<p>I am or must put. You are, &c.</p>	
<p>Second Preter- perfect.</p>	<p>Hé, as, á, Avémos, y Hémos, avéys, an.</p>	<p>Pués- to.</p>	<p>I have put, &c.</p>			

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Pón tu, Póna aquél, Pongámos, Ponéd, Póngan.	} } } } }	Put thou, Put he or let him put, &c.
--	-----------------------	---

Subjunctive Mood.

Pres. Como.	{ Póna, Póngas, Póna, Pongámos, Pongáys, Póngan.	} }	When I do put, &c.	Preterplu- perfect Como.	{ Uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviéradeys, or uviéssédeys, uviéran, or uviéssén.	} }	Pué- sto.	{ When I had put, &c.	
Preter Imper. Como.	{ Pusiéra, ponía, pondría, or pusiéssé, Pusiéras, ponías, pondrias, or pusiésses, Pusiéra, ponía, pondría, or pusiéssé, Pusiéramos, poníamos, pondríamos, or pusiéssémos, Pusiéradeys, poníadeys, pondríadeys, or pusiéssédeys, Pusiéran, ponían, pondrían, or pusiéssén.	} }	When I did put, &c.	First Future Como.	{ Pusiére, Pusiéres, Pusiére, Pusiéremos, Pusiéredeys, Pusiéren.	} }		{ When I shall or will put, &c.	
Preter Per- fect Como.	{ A'ya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.	} }	Puésto.		Second Future Como.	{ Uviére, or avré- uviéres, or avrás. uviére, or avrá- uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avrédeys, uviéren, or avrán.	} }	Pué- sto.	{ When I shall or will put, &c.

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Ponér,]	To put.
	Preterperfect Tense.
Avér Puéstó,]	To have put.
	Gerund.
Poniéndo,]	Putting.
	Participle.
Puéstó,]	Put.

After this manner are declin'd in all Points Componér, to compose, yo Compóngo, I do compose, yo Compúse, I have composed, &c. Also Disponér, to dispose, yo Dispongo, I dispose, Dispúse, I have dispos'd. And Anteponér, to put before, yo Antepongo, I do put before, Antepúse, I have put before. So Proponér, to propose, yo Propóngo, Propúse.

The Irregular Verb Hazér, to do or to make.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Hágo. tu hazes, aquél háze, Hazémos, Hazéys, Házen.	I do make or do, &c.	Preter Plu- perfect.	Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, aviadeys, avían.	Hécho.	I had made or done, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	Hazía, Hazías, Hazía, Hazíamos, Hazíadeys, or Hazíays, Hazían.	I did make or do, &c.	First Future.	Haré, Harás, Hará, Harémos, Haréys, Harán.		I shall, or will make or do, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Hize, Hizíte, Hizo, Hizímos, Hizíteys, Hiziéron.	I have made, done, &c.	Second Future.	Hé, or téngo de Hazér, As de hazér, A de hazér, Hémos de hazér, Avéys de hazér, An de hazér.		I am to or may do, or make, You are, &c.
Second Preter- perfect.	Hé, as, a, Hémos, avéys, an.	Hé- cho.				I have made or done, &c.

Imperative Mood.

<p>Ház tu, Hága aquel, Hagámos, Hazed, Hágan.</p>	<p>Do thou, or make thou, &c.</p>
---	---------------------------------------

Subjunctive Mood.

<p>Pres. Como.</p>	<p>Hága, Hagas, Hága, Hagámos, Hagáys, Hágan.</p>	<p>When I do make or do, &c.</p>	<p>Preterplu- perfect Como.</p>	<p>Uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviéradeys, or uviéssédeys, uviéran, or uviéssen.</p>	<p>He- cho.</p>	<p>When I had made or done &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perf. Como.</p>	<p>Hiziéra, haría, hiziéssé, Hiziéras, harías, hiziésses, Hiziéra, haría, hiziéssé, Hiziéramos, haríamos, hiziéssémos, Hiziéradeys, haríadeys, hiziéssédeys, Hiziéran, harían, hiziéssen.</p>	<p>When I did do, or make, &c.</p>	<p>First Future Como.</p>	<p>Hiziére, Hiziéres, Hiziére, Hiziéremos, Hiziéredeys, Hiziéren.</p>	<p>When I shall will make or do, &c.</p>	
<p>Preter Per- fect Como.</p>	<p>A'ya, ayas, aya, ayámos, ayáys, ayan.</p>	<p>Hecho.</p>	<p>When I have made or done, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future Como.</p>	<p>Uviére, or avré. uviéres, or avrás. uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.</p>	<p>When I shall or will make or do, &c.</p>

Infinitive Mood, present Tense.

Hazér,]	To do, to make. Preterperfect Tense.
Avér hecho,]	To have made or done, &c.

Future Tense.

Avér or Esperár de hazér,]	To make or do hereafter. Gerund.
Haziendo,]	Doing or making, &c.

Participle of the Active and Preter Tense.

El que háze,]	One doing or making. Participle of the Passive and Preter Tense.
----------------	---

Hécho,)	Made or done. Participle of the Future Tense.
----------	--

El que ha, or espéra de hazér,]	About to do.
----------------------------------	--------------

The Irregular Verb Cabér, to be contain'd.

Indicative Mood.

<p>Pres.</p>	<p>Yo Quépo. tu cabes, aquél cabe, cabémos, cabéys, caben.</p>	<p>I am contain'd Thou art con- tain'd, &c.</p>	<p>Preter Plu- perfect.</p>	<p>Avía, avías, avía, aviámos, aviadeys, avian.</p>	<p>Cabído.</p>	<p>I had been con- tain'd, &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perfect.</p>	<p>Cabía, cabías, cabía, cabíamos, cabíadeys, cabían.</p>	<p>I was con- tain'd, &c.</p>	<p>First Future.</p>	<p>Cabré, cabrás, cabrá, cabrémos, cabréys, cabrán.</p>	<p>I shall, or will be contain'd, &c.</p>	
<p>First Preter Perfect.</p>	<p>Cúpe, Cupiste, Cúpo, Cupímos, Cupistey, Cupieron.</p>	<p>I have been, contain'd, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future.</p>	<p>Hé, or téngo de Cabér, As de cabér, A de cabér, Hémos de cabér, Avéys de cabér, An de cabér.</p>	<p>I am to or must be contain'd, You are, &c.</p>	
<p>Second Preter- perfect.</p>	<p>Hé, as, as, Hémos, avéys, an.</p>	<p>Cabí- do.</p>	<p>I have been, contain'd, &c.</p>			

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

<p>Cábe tu, Quépa el, Quepámos nosótro, Cabéd vosótro, Quépan ellos.</p>	<p>Do thou be contain'd, &c.</p>
--	--------------------------------------

Subjunctive Mood.

<p>Pres. Como</p>	<p>Quépa, Quépas, Quépa, Quepámos, Quepáys, Quépan.</p>	<p>When I am contain'd, &c.</p>	<p>Preterplu- perfect Como.</p>	<p>Uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéras, or uviésses, uviéra, or uviéssé, uviéramos, or uviéssémos, uviéradeys, or uviéssédeys, uviéran, or uviéssén.</p>	<p>Cabí- do.</p>	<p>When I had been con- tain'd &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perf. Como.</p>	<p>Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéssé, Cupiéras, cabrias, cupiésses, Cupiéra, cabría, cupiéssé, Cupiéramos, cabriámos, cupiéssémos, Cupiéradeys, cabriádeys, cupiéssédeys, Cupiéran, cabrían, cupiéssén.</p>	<p>When I was con- tain'd, &c.</p>	<p>First Future Como.</p>	<p>Cupiére, Cupiéres, Cupiére, Cupiéremos, Cupiéredeys, Cupiéren.</p>	<p>When I shall will be con- tain'd, &c.</p>	
<p>Preter Per- fect Como.</p>	<p>A'ya, áyas, áya, ayámos, ayáys, áyan.</p>	<p>Cabído.</p>	<p>When I have been contain'd, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future Como.</p>	<p>Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avran.</p>	<p>When I shall or will be con- tain'd &c.</p>

Infinitive Mood Present Tense.

Cabér,]	To be contain'd.
	Preterperfect Tense.
Avér Cabído,]	To have been contain'd.
	Gerund.
Cabiéndo,]	Being contain'd.
	Participle.
Cabído,]	Contain'd.

The Irregular Verb Vér, To see.

Indicative Mood.

<p>Pres.</p>	<p>Yo Véo. tu Vées, aquel Vée, Vémos, Véys, Véen.</p>	<p>I do see, &c.</p>	<p>Preter Plu- perfect.</p>	<p>Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, avíadeys, avían.</p>	<p>Víto.</p>	<p>I had seen, &c.</p>
<p>Preter Im- perfect.</p>	<p>Vía, vías, vía, víamos, víadeys, vían.</p>	<p>I did see, &c.</p>	<p>First Future.</p>	<p>Veré, verás, verá, verémos, veréys, verán.</p>	<p>I shall, or will see, &c.</p>	
<p>First Preter Perfect.</p>	<p>Ví or Víde, Víste, Vío, or Vído, Vímos, Vísteys, Víeron.</p>	<p>I have seen, &c.</p>	<p>Second Future.</p>	<p>Hé, or téngo de vér, As de vér, A de vér, Hémos de vér, Avéys de vér, An de vér.</p>	<p>I am to or must see, You are, &c.</p>	
<p>Second Preter- perfect.</p>	<p>Hé, as, a, Hémos, avéys, an,</p>	<p>Víto</p>	<p>I have seen, &c.</p>			

Imperative Mood.

<p>Vée tu, Véa aquél,</p>	}	See thou, &c.
<p>Veámos, Véd, Véan.</p>		

In the Subjunctive and Infinitive Mood altogether as Verbs foregoing, as the Present Tense Véa, the Preter Imperfect Viéra, vería, viéste, the Preterperfect áya vísto, the Preter Pluperfect uviéra, or uviéste, vísto, the Future viére, Infinitive vér, Participle vísto.

Of Verbs Regular of the Third Conjugation in Ir, as Subír, to go up, or ascend.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	<p>Súbo, Súbes, Súbe, Subímos, Subís, Súben.</p>	<p>I go up, or ascend. You go, &c.</p>	Preter Pluperfect.	<p>Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíays, Avían.</p>	Subído.	<p>I had gone up or ascended. You had, &c.</p>
Preter Imperfect.	<p>Subía, Subías, Subía, Subíamos, Subíadeys, or Subíays, Subían.</p>	<p>I did go up, or ascend. You did, &c.</p>	First Future.	<p>Subiré, Subirás, Subirá, Subiremos, Subiréis Subirán.</p>		<p>I will or shall go up or ascend. You shall, &c.</p>
First Preter Perfect.	<p>Subí, Subíste, Subio, Subímos, Subístey, Subéron,</p>	<p>I did, or have gone up, or ascended. You did, &c.</p>	Second Future.	<p>Hé, or téngo de subír. as de subír, a de subír, Hémos de subír, avéys de subír, an de subír.</p>		<p>I am to or must go up, ascend. You are, &c.</p>
Second Preter Perfect.	<p>Hé, ar, a, Hémos, Avéys, an.</p>	Subído.	<p>I have gone up or ascended. You have, &c.</p>			

Imperative Mood.

<p>Súbe tu, Súba el, Subamos nosotros, Subid vosotros, Súban ellos.</p>	<p>Go you up. Let him go up, &c.</p>
---	--

Optative and Subjunctive Moods, Quándo, Oxalá, When, God grant, &c.

Pres.	<p>Súba, Súbas, Súba, Subámos, Subáis, Súban.</p>	<p>When, or God grant, I do go up or af- cend. You do, &c.</p>	Preterpluperfect.	<p>Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéras, or uviéstes, Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéramos, or uviésemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéstedey, Uviéran, or uviéssen.</p>	Subído.	<p>When or God grant I had gone up, or af- cended. You had, &c.</p>
Preter Imperfect.	<p>Subiéra, or Subiéste, Subiéras, or Subiéstes, Subiéra, or Subiéste, Subiéramos, or Subiésemos, Subiécrays, subiéradeys, or subiéstedeys, Subiéran, or Subiéssen.</p>	<p>When, or God grant I did go up, or ascend. You did, &c.</p>	First Future.	<p>Subiere, Subieres, Subiere, Subiéremos, Subiéredeys, or Subiérey. Subiéren.</p>		<p>When, or God grant I shall or will go up, or ascend. You shall, &c.</p>
Preterperfect.	<p>A'ya, A'yar, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.</p>	<p>When, or God grant I have gone up, or ascended. You have, &c.</p>	Second Future.	<p>Uviére, Uviéres, Uviére, Uviéremos, Uviéreys, Uviéren,</p>	Subído.	<p>When or God grant I shall have gone up or af- cended. You shall, &c.</p>

Infinitive Subír, to go up or ascend, Gerund, Subiendo, Going up or ascending, Participle Passive, Subído, gone up or ascended. In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of this Third Conjugation in Ir, are conjugated, as Subir, to suffer, Hincar, to fill, &c. The Irregular follow.

Verbs Irregular of the Third Conjugation in Ir, or Yr. The Irregular Verb
Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	Yo Vengo. tu Vienes, aquel Viene, Plur. Venimos, Venís, Viéne.	I do come, &c.	Second Preter- perfect.	Hé, as, a, Hémos, avéys, an,	Vení- do.	I have come, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	Venia, Venías, Venía, Veníamos, Veníadeys, or Veníays. Venían.	I did come, &c.	Preter Plu- perfect.	Avía, avías, avía, avíamos, aviadeys, avian.	Venído.	I had come, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	Vine, Veniste, Vino, Venimos, Venistey, Viniéron.	I have come, &c.	Future.	Vendré, or Verné, Vendrás, or Vernás, Vendrá, or Verná, Vendremos, or Vernémos, Vendréys, or Vernéys, Vendrán, or Vernán.		I shall, or will come, &c.

Imperative Mood.

Ven tu, Venga aquel,	} Come thou, &c.
Vengámos, Venid, Vengan.	

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Quando, Oxalá, When God grant, &c.

Pres.	<div><div>Venga, Vengas, Venga, Vengámos, Vengáys, Vengan.</div></div>	<div><div>When I do come, &c.</div></div>	Preter Pluperfect.	<div><div>Uviéra, or uviéste, uviéras, or uviéstes, uviéra, or uviéste, uviéramos, or uviésemos, uviéray, or uviéstedeys, uviéran, or uviéstén.</div></div>	<div><div>Vení- do.</div></div>	<div><div>When I had come, &c.</div></div>	
Preter Im- perfect.	<div><div>Viniéra, vernía, viniéste, viniéras, vernías, viniéstes, Viniéra, vernía, viniéste, Viniéramos, verníamos, viniésemos, Viniéradeys, verníadeys, viniéstedeys, Viniéran, vernían, viniéstén.</div></div>	<div><div>When I did come, &c.</div></div>	First Future.	<div><div>Veniére, Veniétes, Veniére, Veniéremos, Veniéredeys, Veniéren.</div></div>	<div><div>When I shall or will come, &c.</div></div>		
Preter perfect.	<div><div>A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayays, Ayan.</div></div>	<div><div>Venído.</div></div>	<div><div>When I have come, &c.</div></div>	Second Fu- ture.	<div><div>Uviére, or avré, uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá, uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.</div></div>	<div><div>Venído.</div></div>	<div><div>When I shall or will come, &c.</div></div>

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Venir,] To come.

Future Tense.

Avér de venir,] To come hereafter.

Gerund.

Veniendo,] Coming.

Participle of the Present and Active Voice.

El que viene,) One coming.

Participle of the Present Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido,] Come.

The Compounds of this Verb Venir, Vengo, are declin'd in every respect in all Moods and Tenses through out as it is, as Revenir, to return, Revengo, Revine, &c. Convenir, to agree, yo Convengo, Convine. Devenir, to become, yo Devengo, Devine. Sobrevénir, to come upon suddenly, yo Sobrevengo, Sobrevine.

The

The Irregular Verb Dezír, to say.

Indicative Mood.

Pres.	{ Digo, Dizas, Dize, Decimos, Dezis, Dizen.	{ I say, &c.	Preter Pluperfect.	{ Avia, Avias, Avia, Aviamos, Aviays, Avian.	{ Dicho.	{ I had said, &c.
Preter Imperfect.	{ Dezia, Dezias, Dezia, Deziamos, Deziadeys, or Deciays, Dezian.	{ I did say, &c.	First Future.	{ Diré, Dirás, Dirá, Dirémos, Diréys, Dirán.		{ I shall or will say, &c.
First Preter Perfect.	{ Dixe, Dixiste, Dixo, Diximos, Dixisteys, Dixieron.	{ I have said, &c.	Second Future.	{ Hé, or téngo de dezír. as de dezír, a de dezír, Hémos de dezír, avéys de dezír, an de dezír.		{ I am to or must say, You are, &c.
Second Preter Perfect.	{ Hé, as, a, Hémos, Avéys, an.	{ Dicho.				{ I have said, &c.

Imperative Mood.

{ Di tu, Diga aquél,	
{ Digámos, Dezíd, Digan.	{ Say you, &c.

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Quando, Oxalá, When God grant, &c.

Pres.	{ Diga, Digas, Diga, Digámos, Digays, Digan.	{ When I do say, &c.	Preter Pluperfect.	{ Uviéra, or uviése, uviéras, or uviéses, uviéra, or uviése, uviéramos, or uviésemos, uviéray, or uviésedeys, uviéran, or uviésen.	{ Dicho.	{ When I had said, &c.
Preter Imperfect.	{ Dixéra, diría, dixesse, Dixéras, dirías, dixéses, Dixéra, diría, dixesse, Dixéramos, diríamos, dixiésemos, Dixéradeys, diríadeys, dixiésedeyes, Dixéran, dirían, dixiéssen.	{ When I did say, &c.	First Future.	{ Dixére, Dixéres, Dixére, Dixéremos, Dixéredeys, Dixéren.		{ When I shall or will say, &c.
Preter perfect.	{ A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	{ Dicho.	Second Future.	{ Uviére, or avré. uviéres, or avrás, uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avrán.	{ Dicho.	{ When I shall or will say, &c.

Infinitive Mood, Present Tense.

Dezír,] To say, to tell.

Preterperfect Tense.

Avér Dicho,] To have said or told.

Future Tense.

Avér de Dezír,] To say hereafter.

Gerund.

Diziéndo,] Saying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que Dize,] One telling or saying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho,] Told, said, spoken.

Participle of the Future Tense.

En que ha, or Espera de Dezír,] About to say hereafter.

The Compounds of this Verb Dezir, Digo, in all Points through all Moods and Tenses declin'd like the Simple, as

<i>Infinitives.</i>	<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Preterp.</i>
{ Bendezir, To <i>bleſs</i> , Maldezir, To <i>curſe</i> ,	{ Yo Bendigo, Yo Maldigo,	{ Bendixe. Maldixe.

The Irregular Verb Ir, or Yr, To go.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	{ Voy, Vás, Vá, Vámos, Váys, Ván.	{ I go, Thou goeſt, &c.	<i>Preter Pluperfect.</i>	{ Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíays, Avían.	{ Y do.	{ I had gone, &c.
<i>Preter Imperfect.</i>	{ Y'va, ývas, ýva, ývamos, ývadeys, ývan.	{ I did go, &c.	<i>First Future.</i>	{ Yré, Yras, Yrá, Yrémos, Yréys, Yrán.		{ I ſhall or will go, &c.
<i>First Preter Perfect.</i>	{ Fuý, Fuíte, Fué, Fuímos, Fuíteys, Fuéron.	{ I went, &c.	<i>Second Future.</i>	{ Hé, or téngo de yr as de yr, a de yr, Hémos de yr, avéys de yr, an de yr.		{ I am to or muſt go, You are, &c.
<i>Second Preter Perfect.</i>	{ Hé, as, a, Hémos, Avéys, an.	{ Y' do.		{ I have gone, &c.		

Imperative Mood.

{ Ve, Váya,	}
{ Vámos, Y'd, Váyan.	}

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Quándo, Oxalá, When God grant, &c.

<i>Pres.</i>	{ Váya, Váyas, Váya, Vámos, Váys, Váyan.	{ When I do go, &c.	<i>Preter Pluperfect.</i>	{ Uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéras, or uviéſſes, uviéra, or uviéſſe, uviéramos, or uviéſſemos, uviérays, or uviéſſedeys, uviéran, or uviéſſen.	{ Y' do.	{ When I had gone, &c.
<i>Preter Imperfect.</i>	{ Fuéra, yría, fuéſſe, Fuéras, yrías, fuéſſes, Fuéra, yría, fuéſſe, Fuéramos, yríamos, fuéſſemos, Fuéradeys, yríadeys, fuéſſedeys, Fuéran, yrían, fuéſſen.	{ When I did go, &c.	<i>First Future.</i>	{ Fuére, Fuéres, Fuéſſe, Fuéremos, Fuéredeys, Fuéren.		{ When I ſhall or will be, &c.
<i>Preter perfect.</i>	{ A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	{ Y' do.	<i>Second Future.</i>	{ Uviére, or avré. uviéres, or avras, uviére, or avrá. uviéremos, or avrémos, uviéredeys, or avréys, uviéren, or avran.	{ Y' do.	{ When I ſhall or will go, &c.

Infinitive Mood, Preſent Tenſe.

Y'r,] To Go.

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Avér ýdo,] To have gone.

Future Tenſe.

Avér de yr,] To go hereafter.

Gerund.

Yéndo,] Going.

Participle of the Present Tense Active.
El que va,] *One going.*

Participle of the Present Tense Passive.
Ydo,] *Gone.*

The Irregular Verb Oír, To hear.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	{ O'yo, O'yes, O'ye, Oímos, Oís, O'yen.	{ <i>I hear, You hear, &c.</i>	<i>Second Preter Perfect.</i>	{ Hé, as, a, Hémos, Avéys, an.	{ Oído.	{ <i>I have heard, You have, &c.</i>
<i>Preter Imperfect.</i>	{ O'ía, O'ías, O'ía, O'íamos, O'íays, O'ían.	{ <i>I did hear, You did hear, &c.</i>	<i>First Future.</i>	{ Oyré, Oyrás, Oyrá, Oyrémos, Oyréys, Oyrán.		{ <i>I will or shall hear, You will, &c.</i>
<i>First Preter Perfect.</i>	{ O'í, O'íte, O'yó, O'ímos, O'íteys, O'yéron.	{ <i>I did, or have heard, You did, &c.</i>	<i>Second Future.</i>	{ Hé, or téngo de oír. as de oír, a de oír, Hémos de oír, avéys de oír, an de oír.		{ <i>I am to or must hear, You are, &c.</i>
<i>Preter Pluperfect.</i>	{ Avía, Avías, Avía, Avíamos, Avíays, Avían.	{ Oído.		{ <i>I had heard, You had, &c.</i>		

Imperative Mood.

{ O'ye, O'ya, Oygámos, Oíd, O'yan.	{ <i>Do you hear. Let him, &c.</i>
--	--

Optative and Subjunctive Moods, Quándo, Oxalá, When, God grant, &c.

<i>Pres.</i>	{ O'ya, O'gas, O'ya, Oygámos, Oygays, O'yan.	{ <i>When, or God grant, I do hear, &c. You do, &c.</i>	<i>Preterpluperfect.</i>	{ Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéras, or uviéstes, Uviéra, or uviéste, Uviéramos, or uviésemos, Uviéradeys, or uviéstedeyes, Uviéran, or uviéstén.	{ Oído.	{ <i>When or God grant I had heard, You had, &c.</i>
<i>Preter Imperfect.</i>	{ Oyéa, or Oyéste, Oyéras, or Oyéstes, Oyéa, or Oyéste, Oyéramos, or Oyésemos, Oyérays, Oyéradeys, or Oyéstedeyes, Oyéran, or Oyéstén.	{ <i>When, or God grant I did hear, You did, &c.</i>	<i>First Future.</i>	{ Oyére, Oyéres, Oyére, Oyéremos, Oyéreys, Oyéren.		{ <i>When, or God grant I shall or will hear, You shall, &c.</i>
<i>Preterperfect.</i>	{ A'ya, A'yas, A'ya, Ayámos, Ayáys, A'yan.	{ Oído.		{ Uviére, Uviéres, Uviére, Uviéremos, Uviéreys, Uviéren.	{ Oydo.	{ <i>When or God grant I shall or will have heard, You shall, &c.</i>

Infinitive Mood Present Tense.

Oír,]	<i>To hear.</i>
	<i>Gerund.</i>
Oyendo,]	<i>Hearing.</i>
	<i>Participle.</i>
Oydo,]	<i>Heard.</i>

The Irregular Verb Herir, To Hurt, or Wound.

Indicative Mood.		Imperative Mood.	
Pref.	{ Hiéro, Hiétes, Hiére, Herímos, Herís, Hiéren.	{ I wound, You wound, &c.	{ Hiére, Hiéra, Hirámos, Heríd, Hiéran.
			} Do you wound.

Optative and Subjunctive Mood, Quando, Oxalá, When God grant, &c.

Pref.	{ Hiéra, Hiéras, Hiéra, Hirámos, Hiráys, Hiéran.	{ When or God grant I did wound, You do, &c.	Preter perfect.	{ Hiriére, Hiriéres, Hiriére, Hiriéremos, Hiriéreys, Hiriéren.	{ When or God grant I shall or will wound You shall, &c.
Preter Im- perfect.	{ Hiriéffe, or Hiriéra, Hiriéffes, or Hiriéras, Hiriéffe, or Hiriéra, Hiriéffemos, or Hiriéramos, Hiriéffedeys, or Hiriérayas, Hiriéffen, or Hiriéran.	{ When or God grant I did wound, You did, &c.			

Gerund.

Hiriéndo,] Wounding.

All its other Tenses in all Moods are as in Verbs Regular, and therefore omitted to avoid Prolixity. Only the First i, is omitted as Pret. Imp. H-ria, Pret. Perf. Heria, &c.

The Irregular Verbs Dormir, To Sleep, and Morir, to Die.

Indicative Mood.

Pref.	{ Duérmo, Duérmes, Duérme, Dormímos, Dormís, Duérmen.	{ Muéro, Muéres, Muére, Morímos, Morís, Muéren.	{ I Sleep, I Die. You Sleep, You Die, &c.
Preter Imperf.	[Dormía,	[Moría, as, a, &c. As in Verbs Regular.	
First Preter Perfect.	{ Dormí, Dormíste, Dormió, Dormímos, Dormistéys, Dormiéron.	{ Morí, Moríste, Morío, Morímos, Moristéys, Muriéron.	{ I did, or have Slept, Dy'd. You did, &c.
Second Preter perfect.	{ Hé dormido, As dormido, A dormido, Hémos dormido, Avéys dormido, An dormido.	{ Hé muerto, As muerto, A muerto, Hémos muerto, Avéys Muerto, An Muerto.	{ I have Slept, Dy'd. You have, &c.
Preterplu- perfect.	{ Avía, Dormido, Avías, &c.	{ Muerto.	{ I had Slept, Dy'd. You had, &c.
First Future.	{ Dormiré, Dormirás,	{ Moriré, Morirás, &c.	{ I shall or will Sleep, Dye. You shall, &c.
Second Fu- ture.	{ Hé, or tengo de dormir, as de dormir.	{ Morir, Morir, &c.	{ I am to or must Sleep, Die. You are, &c.

Imperative Mood.

{ Duérme, Duérma, Durmámos, Dormíd, Duérman.	{ Muére, Muéra, Murámos, Moríd, Muéran.	{ Do you Sleep, Die. Let him, &c.
---	--	---

Optative and Subjunctive Moods, Quando, Oxalá, When, God grant, &c.

{ Duérma, Duérmas,	{ Muéra, Muéras,	{ When, or God grant, &c. I do Sleep, Die, You do &c.
--------------------------	------------------------	---

FFFF

Duérma,

	<div> <div> Duérma, Durmámos, Durmais, Duérgan.</div> <div> Muéra, Murámos, Muráis, Muérgan.</div> </div>	
Preter Im- perfect.	<div> <div>Durmiéra, or Durmiéſſe, Durmiéras, or Durmiéſſes,</div> <div> Muriéra, or Muriéſſe, Muriéras, or muriéſſes, &c.</div> </div>	<div> When, or God grant I did Sleep or Die, You did, &c. </div>
Preter- perfect.	<div> <div>A'ya dormído, Muérto, A'yas dormído, Muérto, &c.</div> </div>	<div> When, or God grant I had Slept, Dy'd. You have, &c. </div>
Preter Plu- perfect.	<div> <div>Uviéſſe, or uviéra dormído, Uviéſſes, or uviéras dormído,</div> <div> Muérto, Muérto, &c.</div> </div>	<div> When, or God grant I had Slept, Dy'd. You had, &c. </div>
First Future.	<div> <div>Durmiére, Durmiéres,</div> <div> Muriére, Muriéres, &c.</div> </div>	<div> When, or God grant I ſhall, or will Sleep, Die, You ſhall, &c. </div>
Second Future.	<div> <div>Uviére dormído, Uviéres dormído,</div> <div> Muérto, Muérto,</div> </div>	<div> When, or God grant I ſhall or will have Slept, Dy'd, You ſhall, &c. </div>

Infinitive.

Dormír, [Morír, To Sleep, To Die.

Gerund.

Dormiendo, [Muriendo, Sleeping, Dying.

The following Irregular Verbs in *ir*, change *e* in the Penultima of the Infinitive Mood into *i*, in the First, Second and Third Persons Singular, and the Third Person Plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, the Second and Third Persons Singular, and the First and Third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Servir, to serve, *Sirvo*, I serve, *Sirves*, *Sirve*, *Servimos*, *Servis*, *Sirven*. Imper. *Sirve*, *Sirva*, *Sirvámos*, *Servid*, *Sirván*. Opt. and Conjunc. *Sirva*, *Sirvas*, &c. All other Tenses in each Mood, as the Regular Verbs, So

Reír, to Laugh, *Rio*, I laugh.

Concebir, to conceive, *Concíbo*, I conceive.

Gemir, to sigh, *Gímo*, I sigh.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the Penultima, in the same Moods, Tenses and Persons as above, except the First and Second Plural of the Imperative Mood, as

Advertir, to take Notice, *Adviérto*.

Arrepentir, to repent, *Arrepiento*.

Consentir, to consent, *Consiento*.

Mentir, to lye, *Miento*.

The Verbs *Elegir*, and *Regir*, to choose, and to rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons as above, *Elegir*, *Elíjo*, *Regir*, *Ríjo*, &c.

Ungir, to seign, and *Ungir*, to anoint, in the same manner, make *Finjo*, and *U'njo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses and Persons above mention'd.

Seguir, makes *Sigo*, *Sigues*, *Sigue*, *Sigámos*, *Seguid*, *Sigán*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons as above:

Those that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd conjugated, as here noted.

Conduzir, to conduct. *Condúzgo*, *Condúzes*, *Condúze*, *Conduzimos*, *Conduzís*, *Conducen*. Preterperfect, *Condúxe*, *Conduciste*, &c. Opt. and Subjunct. Pref. *Condúzga*. Pret. Imperf. *Conduxéra*, or *Conduxéſſe*. Fut. *Conduxére*. In the same manner, *Introduzir*, *Induzir*, *Traduzir*, and *Producir*.

Salir, to go out, *Salgo*, *Salas*, *Salé*, *Salimos*, *Salís*, *Salén*. Imper. *Sál*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Salgán*. Opt. and Conjunc. *Salga*, the rest Regular.

Of Verbs Impersonals.

The Spanish Impersonals like the Latin, want the First and Second Person, and are declin'd only in the Third Person throughout all Mood and Tenses, as

Indicative Mood.

Present. Ay,	There is.	
Imperfect. Avía,	There was.	
1 Perfect. U'vo,	There was.	
2 Perfect. á,	} Avido, {	There has been.
Pluperfect. avía,		There had been.
Future. Avrá.		There shall be, &c.
Imperat. A'ya,		Let there be.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present. A'ya,	When there is.
Imperfect. Uviéra, avría, uviéſſe.	When there was.
Perfect. Aya avído,	When there has been.
Pluperfect. Uviéra, or uviéſſe avído,	When there had been.
Future. Uviére, or avra avído.	When there shall have been.

Indicative Mood.

Present. Cúmpre,	It behoves, or is fit.
Imperfect. Cumplía,	It did behove, or was fit.
1 Perfect. Cumplió,	It has behov'd, or has been fit.
2 Perfect. A Cumplido,	
Pluperfect. Avía Cumplido,	
Future. Cumplirá.	

And so through the Third Person of the rest.

Indicative

Indicative Mood.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Es menestér,</i>	<i>It behoves,</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>E'ra menestér,</i>	<i>I did behove.</i>
<i>1 Perfect.</i>	<i>Fué menestér,</i>	<i>It did behove.</i>
<i>2 Perfect.</i>	<i>A sido menestér,</i>	<i>It has behov'd.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i>	<i>Avia sido menestér,</i>	<i>It had behov'd.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Será menestér.</i>	<i>It will behove.</i>

The Verb Impersonal Plazér.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Pláze,</i>	<i>It pleases.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Plazía,</i>	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>1 Perfect.</i>	<i>Plúgo,</i>	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>2 Perfect.</i>	<i>A Plazido,</i>	<i>It has pleas'd.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i>	<i>Avia Plazido,</i>	<i>It had pleas'd.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Plazera,</i>	<i>It will please.</i>
<i>Imperat.</i>	<i>Pléga.</i>	<i>Let it please.</i>

Subjunctive Mood.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Pléga,</i>	<i>When it does please.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Pluguiéra, Pluguiése,</i>	<i>When it did please.</i>
<i>Perfect.</i>	<i>Aya Plazido,</i>	<i>When it has pleas'd.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i>	<i>Uviéra Plazido,</i>	<i>When it had pleas'd.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Pluguiére,</i>	<i>When it will please.</i>

To form an Impersonal Passive, you must take this Particle *Se*, and the Third Person of any Verb thus: Which Particle so added makes a Verb Impersonal Passive, as

<i>Pres.</i>	<i>Se Díze,</i>	} <i>It is said or spoken.</i>
<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Se Dezía,</i>	
<i>1 Perfect.</i>	<i>Se Díxo,</i>	
<i>2 Perfect.</i>	<i>Se a Dícho,</i>	
<i>Pluperf.</i>	<i>Se avía Dicho,</i>	
<i>Future.</i>	<i>Se Dira.</i>	} <i>It was said or spoken, &c.</i>

Of Participles.

In Spanish, properly speaking there is no Participle of the Present Tense Active, but the want of it is supply'd by the Third Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, and the Article *El*, as *El que revéla*, *Revealing*, or *he that reveales*.

Participles of the Preter Tense and Passive Signification end in *ado*, *ido*, or *ydo*, which in the First Conjugation are, form'd of the Third Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by adding *do*, as, *Revéla*, *revelado*: *Ama*, *amado*: *Castiga*, *castigado*: And in the Second and Third Conjugation of the same Present Tense, by changing *e*, into *ido* and *ydo*, as *Entiende*, *entendido*: *Lée*, *leydo*, *Crée*, *creydo*, *Pide*, *pedido*.

But for the Irregular (according to the Nature of the Word) without Rule, *Dícho*, *said*, *spoken*, *Hécho*, *made*.

The Future Tense with this Verb *Ha*, or *Espéra*, and the Infinitive of the Verb, as *El que ha*, or *Espera de revelár* *Eutendér*, or *oyr*: *About to reveal*, *about to understand*, *about to hear*.

Of Adverbs.

Having spoken of the Four Parts of Speech declin'd, we come next to the Four undeclinable, the First of which is the Adverb. Of these some are Primitives, as *Si*, *yes*, *No*, *no*. Others Derivatives, some of which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as *Alta*, *high*, *Altamente*, *highly*, *Graciosa*, *pretty*, or *pleasant*, *Graciosamente*, *prettily*, or *pleasantly*. The several sorts of Adverbs are as follows.

Of Quality.	{	<i>Fielmente</i> , Faithfully.
		<i>Buénamente</i> , or <i>bien</i> , Well.
		<i>Malamente</i> , or <i>mal</i> , Ill.

Of Quantity.	{	<i>Múcho</i> , Much.
		<i>Póco</i> , Little.
		<i>Múcho mas</i> , Much more.
		<i>Mas</i> , More.
		<i>Por de mas</i> , Needless.
		<i>Demasiado</i> , too much.

Of Time

{	<i>Oy</i> , To Day.
	<i>Ayér</i> , Yesterday.
	<i>Mañana</i> , To Morrow.
	<i>Antier</i> , The other Day.
	<i>Muchó ha</i> , Long since.
	<i>Poco ha</i> , A little since.
	<i>Agóra</i> , Now.
	<i>Antes</i> , Before.
	<i>Luégo</i> , Forthwith, by and by, presently.
	<i>Núnca</i> , Never.
	<i>Quándo</i> , When.
	<i>Siempre</i> , Always.
	<i>Entónces</i> , Then.
	<i>Miéntras</i> , In the mean while.
	<i>Súbito</i> , Suddenly.
	<i>Tárde</i> , Late.
	<i>Temprano</i> , Early.

Of Place.	{	Aquí, <i>Here.</i>	{	Mas, <i>More.</i>
		Ay, allí, allá, <i>There.</i>		Demasiado, <i>Too much.</i>
		A Donde, <i>Whither, where.</i>		
		De Donde, <i>From whence.</i>		
		Acá, <i>This way.</i>		
		Aculla, <i>That way.</i>		
		De aquí, <i>From hence.</i>		
		De allí, de allá, <i>From thence.</i>		
		Dentro, <i>Within.</i>		
		Fuera, <i>Without.</i>		
Of Affirming.	{	Delante, <i>Before.</i>	{	Oxalá, <i>Would to God, I pray God, God grant.</i>
		Atrás, <i>Behind.</i>		O Si, <i>Would to God, I pray God.</i>
		A parte, <i>Aside, apart, by it self.</i>		
		Ariba, <i>Above.</i>		
		Abáxo, <i>Beneath.</i>		
		Cerca, <i>About, nigh to, almost.</i>		
		Cábe, Junto, <i>Near to.</i>		
		Léjos, <i>Far off.</i>		
		Encima, <i>Upon.</i>		
		Debaxo, <i>So, Under.</i>		
Of Denying.	{	Si, <i>Yes.</i>	{	Porque? <i>Why? wherefore.</i>
		Cierto, ciertamente, <i>Truly.</i>		Que, <i>What.</i>
		En verdad, Verdaderamente, <i>Truly, in Truth, Verily.</i>		Donde, <i>Where.</i>
		Tambien, <i>As well, also.</i>		Adonde, <i>Whether.</i>
		Antes, <i>Rather.</i>		De Donde, <i>From whence.</i>
				Quando, <i>When.</i>
				Cómo, <i>How.</i>
Of Numbring.	{	No, <i>Not.</i>	{	Quicá, <i>Perhaps.</i>
		Nada, <i>Nothing.</i>		Porventura, <i>Peradventure, Perhaps.</i>
		Ni, Tam poco, <i>Neither.</i>		
Of Shewing.	{	Una Vez, <i>Once.</i>	{	Después, <i>After.</i>
		Dos vézes, <i>Twice.</i>		Allénde, <i>Beyond.</i>
		Tres vézes, <i>Thrice, &c. As in the Pronoun before of Numbers.</i>		Aquénde, <i>On this side.</i>
		Muchas vézes, <i>Often.</i>		Finalmente, <i>In fine.</i>
		Pocas vézes, <i>Seldom.</i>		
		Amenúdo, <i>Often.</i>		
Of Encouraging.	{	Hé Aquí, <i>Behold.</i>	{	Cómo, <i>As.</i>
				Así, <i>So.</i>
Of Increasing.	{		{	A Caso, Por dicha, <i>By chance, by hap.</i>
Of Diminishing.	{		{	Mas, <i>More.</i>
				Ménos, <i>Less.</i>
				Poco, <i>Little.</i>
				Páso, <i>Soft and fair.</i>
Of Asking.	{		{	Of Comparifon.
				Mas, <i>More.</i>
				Ménos, <i>Less.</i>
				Mejór, <i>Better.</i>
				Peór, <i>Worse.</i>
Of Doubring.	{		{	Gathering together.
				Junto, Juntamente, <i>Together.</i>
Of Order.	{		{	Severing.
				A parte, <i>A funder.</i>
Of Likeness.	{		{	
Of Chance.	{		{	
Of Comparifon.	{		{	

Of Conjunctions.

A Conjunction is that which joins parts of Speech together, whereof some are Copulative, as

Y, and E, *And.*
 Cómo, *As.*
 También, *Also.*

Note, That e is little us'd in Spanish at present, but is frequent in Old Books. Others are Disjunctive, as

Ni, *Neither, Nor.*
 O, *Either, Or.*
 Others Cautative, as
 Porque, *Wherefore.*
 Others Conditional, as
 Si, *If.*
 Dado que, *If so.*
 Others of Exception as
 Sino, *Except, if not.*
 Mas, *But.*
 Otramente, *Otherwise.*
 Others of other sorts as
 Alomenos, *At least.*
 Aunque, *Altho.*
 Toda via, *Notwithstanding.*

Of Prepositions.

Prepositions are either us'd in Composition, or not compounded. Those us'd in Composition are, a, ad, am, com, des, di, dis, en, ex, in, ob, pre, pro, re, se, sa, and su. In a, as, Aclámo, I shout to. In ad, as, Advnedizo, a Stranger in aim, as ampáro, Protection. In com, as Comparo, I compare, and this Preposition always implies putting together. In des signifying the contrary of the Word it is join'd to as, Desfazér, to undo. In dis, as Disponér, to dispose. In ex, as Expuéto, expos'd. In in, as Inferir, to infer. In pre, signifying before, as Preponér, to set before. In pro, as Pponér, to propose. In re, signifying back, or again, as Réponer, to put again, Retenér, to hold back. In se, as Separar, to separate. In to, as Socorrér, to succour. In su, as Suponer, to suppose.

Others not compounded, but only set before parts of Speech, as

A, To, *as* A fe, *alafe*, By my Troth.
 De, Of or from, *as* De la corte, *From the Court*.
 Para, For. *As* Para mi, *For me*.
 Por, For, by or through. *As* Por mi vida, *By my Life*.
 Contra, *Against*.
 Cabe, Near. *As* Cabe la ciudad, *Near the City*.
 Frontero, Over *against*.
 Hasta, *Until*.
 Házia, *Towards*.
 Sobre, *Upon*.
 Encíma, *Upon the Top*.
 So, *Under*.
 Entre, *Between*.
 Atrás, *Behind*.
 Adelánte, *Before*.
 Céerca, *Acerca, About*.
 Fuéra, *Without Doors*.
 Déntro, *Within*.
 Con, *With*.
 Sin, *Without*.
 Desde, *From or since*.

These following are us'd with the Preposition De, with them, as

Aquende, *On this side*.
 Allende, *On the other side*.
 Al deredór, or Entorno, *About*.

Of an Interjection.

AN Interjection declares the Passions of the Mind. The Spaniards use not so often Interjections or sudden Passions of the Mind; Neither in their Speech or Writing, as do the French or Italian, and yet they have these, following: Some be of

Mirth or Rejoycing.	[A la gala. O fine.
Laughing.	[Hi, hi, hi, or Ha, ha, ha.
Wondring.	{ O Jesus, O Jesus.
	{ Vala me Dios, God blefs me.
Grieving.	[Ay, ay, Alas.

T H E
S E C O N D P A R T
O F T H E
S P A N I S H
G R A M M A R,
C O N T A I N I N G

Some Few REMARKS upon SYNTAX.

THE Spanish has so great an Affinity with the Latin, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little Difficulty in the Construction of the other, and generally such as are unskill'd in the Latin, do not care to overburden their Memories with Rules. I shall therefore only give some few Remarks for the present Ease of Learners, leaving the rest to Reading and Practice.

Of Nouns and Articles.

THERE is no doubt but that all Nouns require the Article of the same Gender, as el Hombre, the Man, la Mujer, the Woman, lo bueno, that which is good. However, we find an Exception in Words of the Feminine Gender, viz. el Agua, the Water, el Alma, the Soul, and so in many others, but it is to be observ'd, that the Spaniards not using any Apostrophe, do this to avoid the ill Sound of Two Vowels meeting, and yet it is not always practis'd, for it is proper to say la Antiquedad, Antiquity, and so in others.

The English Article an is not us'd in Spanish, as we say an other Man, an other Day, they only say, otro Hombre, otro Día, not un otro Hombre, or un otro Día.

The Adjectives Grande, Bueno, Malo, Uno, and Ciento, lose the last Syllable, when plac'd before a Substantive, so we say, Gran Hombre, Buen Caválo, Mal Carnéro, Un Pérrro, Cien Christianos, but if they follow the Substantive, they retain their last Syllable, as un Hombre grande, Carnéro malo, &c. In the Feminine Gender this does not hold, for Grande varies, according to the Substantive that follows, if it begin with a Consonant, then de is always cut off, as gran Mugér, gran Cosa; but if the Substantive begins with a Vowel, especially an a, then it is often indifferently us'd in good Authors, as gran Alboroto, or Grande Alboroto, but the First is the most approv'd. Cien is always us'd before Substantives of either Gender, as Cien périlas, &c. But Buena, Mala, Una, never lose their last Syllable, what ever Substantive follows, as Buena Mugér, Mala Azeytuna, una Arróba.

Of Pronouns.

NOS, and Vos differ from Nosótro and Vosótro, which Two last signify We, and Ye, in the common Acceptation of the Plural Number, and have the Feminine Gender Nosótras, and Vosótras. But Nos is generally us'd for a single Person, and only by a Sovereign, as among us We is us'd. Vos is also apply'd to a single Person, that is by great ones speaking to inferior, or among very familiar Friends, to avoid saying Tu, Thou, which is too coarse, or to save the Respect of V. M.

Vos, is us'd in the same manner before Verbs Plural, as Vos amays, but in the other Cases the V is cut off, as yo os daré, I will give, you, and the same when it follows the Verb, as Quitá os de ay, stand away.

E'llo and E'lla have a Dative Case of a different Termination, which is contrary to the general Spanish Rule, for they sometimes make le and les, and these Two are only us'd, when they imply something of Acquisition, and denote the Person receiving, as Vi a Pedro, y díle, or le di sus cartas. I saw Peter and gave him his Letters. Vide mis amigos y comuniquéles mis cuydádos. I saw my Friends and imparted my Affairs to them. Where it appears in both Places there is an Imparting, or Giving. In these Cases there is no using of lo or los, for le or les, because it would breed Confusion, as thus, Los que perdiéron sus haziendas, piden a los Juézes, que les ahorquen los ladrónes, They who have been robb'd require of the Judges that they hang the Thieves. Now were it said, Que los ahorquen los ladrónes, there would be no deciding whether they requir'd that the Thieves should be hang'd, or that the Thieves should hang them. Le, and Les are us'd for the Feminine Gender, as well as de Masculine, as Encontré tres dâmas y les di de merendâr, I met Three Ladies and gave them a Collation.

Mi, Ti, Si, Are us'd after Prepositions, a mi, to me, para ti, for you, por si, by himself. But after con, they must have the Syllable go added, as con mígo, with me, Con tígo, with you, Con sígo, with himself.

Me, Te, Se, Are join'd to Verbs, and stand for the Dative and Accusative, as Díxome, he told me. Servírte, to serve thee. Amárse, to love himself.

They may be also plac'd before the Verb, provided a Nominative Case is before them, as yo me irás, I will be gone. Tu te irás, You will be gone, El se irá, He will be gone.

Se, before the Third Person of a Verb, signifies what we express by it is, or they, as Se dice, it is said, or reported, as they say.

La, le, lo, las, les, los, me, te, se, nos and vos, are frequently join'd to Verbs, as Oyréla, Oyréle, Oyrélo, Oyrélas, Oyrélos. I will hear her, him, it, them, Daréles, I will give them, &c.

When le, lo, las, les, los, are join'd to the Infinitive Mood, the last r of it is commonly chang'd into l, for the better Sound, as for Dezír-le, say Dezille, &c.

Mío, Túyo, Súyo, Nuéstro, Vuéstro, and Mísmo, have the Article added to them, when they are spoken absolutely, and without a Substantive, as lo mío, what is mine, lo túyo, what is yours, &c.

Cúyo, is an Interrogation, as Cúyo es esto? whose is this? But it is often without any Interrogation, as El hombre cúyo es ésto, the Man whose this is.

Mi, Tu, Su, Plur. Mis, Tús, Sús, are us'd for Mío, Túyo, Súyo, but always before a Substantive, and not after it, as mi Padre, my Father, tu Madre, your Mother, su Hermano, his Brother.

Este, éste, aquél, are all Demonstratives, but éste implies the thing near the Person spoken to; Aquél denotes a Distance from both Persons.

The Relatives, or Interrogatives. Qual, sometimes is Interrogatory, as Qual d'ellos, which of them, and sometimes comparative, as Qual es el verano tal el invierno, As the Summer so the Winter, and sometimes it is only Descriptive, as Qual cóge el oro, qual la pláta, one Man gathers the Gold, another the Silver.

Que tal, differs herein from Qual, that the latter asks the particular Person or thing, which of them, whereas the other Questions the Quality of the Person or thing, what sort of either.

Of Verbs.

PROPERLY speaking the Spanish Verbs have only these simple Tenses the present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, and the Future, of the Indicative Mood, the Imperative, and the Present, Preterimperfect and Future of the Optative or Subjunctive, as A'mo, Amába, Amé, Amaré. A'ma tu. Yo áme, yo amára, amaría, or amalle. And the Present of the Infinitive Amar, the Gerund Amándo, and the Participle Passive Amado. All the rest are form'd by Circumlocution, putting many words together to supply the Defect of such Tenses.

The Tenses made by Circumlocution, are the Second Preterperfect, He amádo, I have lov'd, the Preterpluperfect of the Indicative Mood, Avía amádo, I had lov'd, the Preterperfect, Preterpluperfect and Second Future of the Optative or Subjunctive, Aja, Uviéise, or Uviére Amádo, I have, had, or shall love. So the Preterperfect Infinitive Avér dado, To have given, the Participle Active, El que da, he that is giving, and the Participle of the Future Tense, El que ha de dar, he that is to give hereafter.

The Third Person of the Verb is generally us'd in speaking to any Person, that is not a mean Servant or the like, as Hazéd me ésta merced, do me this favour.

Verbs Active sometimes govern a Dative, and sometimes an Accusative Case, as Da ésto a Pédro, give this to Peter, Sigue la bueno, follow that which is good, or else the Article is left out, as Traygo pan, I bring Bread.

Of Prepositions.

THE Cases to be given to some parts of Speech, being one Principal part of Syntax, and there being properly no Spanish Cases as in Latin, therefore we will treat of the Prepositions, which have the same Effect as the Latin Cases.

When the Noun in Speech denotes the Person possessing, or signifies whose a thing is, we always make use of the Preposition de, as Ésta libro es de Juan, this is John's Book. Ésta ley es de Dios, this is Gods Law, unless we use the Positive Degree of that same Person, making it an Adjective to the thing possess'd, as Ésta ley es Divina, this is a Divine Law.

This use of the Positive is so necessary, when the Possession belongs to any of the Pronouns, that we must always say Ésta casa es mía, túya, súya, this House is mine, yours, his, not de mí, de ti, or de si. Tho' it may be us'd, when they do not denote Possession, as Acuérdate de mí, Remember me, Duélete de ti, have Compassion on your self, Dió buena cuenta de si, he gave a good Account of himself.

The Preposition de is also apply'd to the Place from whence we come as Vengo de Palacio, I come from Court.

When the Noun denotes Acquisition, or the Person for whom a thing is, we use the Prepositions, a, or para, as Da a Juan ésta carta, Give this Letter to John, Ésta carta es para Pédro, This Letter is for Peter. Except here also the same Terminations, Me, Te, Se, Of they Pronouns Yo, Tu, Se, which tho' they Denote Acquisition, do not admit of these Prepositions, as Dióme el dinero, he gave me the Money, Dióte las grácias, He return'd you Thanks, Dióse la muéte, he kill'd himself.

They are also apply'd to the Place we are going to, whether proper or Appellative, as Voy a Madrid, de donde partiré para Róma, I am going to Madrid, whence I shall set out for Rome.

A, is also apply'd to the Noun Passive, when it is a proper Name, Pédro ama a Juan, Peter loves John; but when it is an Appellative it is sometimes us'd and sometimes omitted, as El Maestro ama a sus Discípulos, the Master loves his Scholars, and yo cójo las Florés, I gather the Flowers.

The Preposition Con, before Mi, Ti, Si, requires that the Syllable go, should be added to them, as Conmigo, with me, Contigo, with you, Consigo, with himself.

The Preposition Por denotes the end that moves or inclines, and the means to attain an end, as Sirvo a Dios por gozár del premio, I serve God, to enjoy the Reward. Yendo a Sevilla pasé por Córdova, going to Sevil, I pass'd through Cordova.

Por, is sometime us'd for the Adverb No, placing it before a Verb of the Infinitive Mood, as No is plac'd before the Participle, as Ésta obra, está por Acabár, this Work is not done, instead of, ésta obra no está acabada.

Of Adverbs and Conjunctions.

THERE is but little to be said of these Two parts of Speech. As for the Adverbs, when Two of these that end in mente follow one another, the Two last Syllables mente of the First of them are always cut off, as Caminar segúra, y alegreménte, To travel safely and merrily.

A Negative Adverb join'd to any other Negative part of Speech does not make an Affirmative as in other Languages, for No véo a nadie, signifies I see no body, No te halla ninguno, No body can find you; nor can the same Words be taken negatively without both the Negatives, for we cannot properly say in Spanish Véo a nadie, I see no body, but if we must avoid the Two Negatives, we must say, No véo a Persona alguna, I do not see any Person; and Nadie te halla, No Man can find you.

So, No quiéro náda, Is, I will have nothing, and yet No náda, is always taken for nothing, as Fáltale un no nada, it wants as good as nothing.

No, is sometimes an Interrogation, as No vendreys por acá, will not you come this way.

The Conjunctions También, and Tampóco, the First is Affirmative, as yo también, and I too; Ni yo tampoco, no I neither, The First signifying as well, the Second as little.

Of Figurative Construction.

What little of this sort I find in the Spanish Tongue is as follows.

THE Paragoge, or adding of some Letter or Syllable at the end of a word is scarce to be found at present, tho' us'd formerly, as we may see in Old Songs and Ballads, where they sometimes say Amóre, for Amor, Cantáre, for Cantár, but these being out of date, it is now only found in the Verbs Vóy and Sóy, from the Verbs Ir, and Sér, which should be according to the General Rule of Spanish Verbs Vo, and So, as they were us'd in former Ages, but now have the y added for the better Sound.

The Second is cutting off a Letter, as when we say, yo vía, tu vías, for yo veía, Tu veías.

Thirdly, By cutting off a Letter at the end, as Mas val prevenir, it is better to provide, for Mas vále, The same is seen in the words Entristecemosónos, Alegrámonos, for Entristecemosnos, Alegrámonos, and so in many others.

Fourthly, Is by inverting the Order of the Letters, as very many say, Hazédlo, Dezídlo, Quitádo, &c. for Hazédlo, Dezídlo, Quitádo, &c. In the same manner some speak and write Preládo, for Preládo, and so in other words.

There is another Figurative Construction, which depends on several Words, when any are left out and to be understood, as Buénos días, Good Morrow, Subintelligitur, Os de Dios, God give you, and so in several other Cases, which are so common in most Languages, that there needs not any thing be said in particular of them here, and in all other Respects the Spanish Syntax is so like the Latin, French and Italian, that it would be superfluous to burden the Learner with a Multitude of Rules, which are already known to Schollars, and which others will never take the Pains to learn.

Some General Observations for the Framing of the Spanish from the Latin.

Latin Substantives which have their Termination in as, become Spanish by changing s into d, as in these following.

Latin.	Charitas, Majestas, Crudelitas, Civitas, Fidelitas, Securitas, Obscuritas, Conformitas, Calamitas, Voluntas, &c.	Spanish.	Caridad. Majestad. Crueldad. Ciudad. Fidelidad. Seguridad. Escuridad. Conformidad. Calamidad. Voluntad.
--------	---	----------	--

Most Latin VWords beginning with Pl, in the Spanish change it in Ll, as

Latin.	Plenus, Planus, Pluvia, Plaga, Plorare.	Spanish.	Lléno. Lláno. Llúvia. Llaga. Llorar.
--------	---	----------	--

So the Latin F, in Spanish is often chang'd in H, as

Latin.	Facere, Faba, Fax, Falco, Farina, Factor, Formosus, Ferrum, Fervor.	Spanish.	Hazér. Háva. Héz. Halcón. Harína. Hedór. Hermóso. Hiérro. Hervór.
--------	---	----------	---

Latin Substantives ending in io, becoming Spanish by adding an n, as

Latin.	Educatio, Religio, Electio,	Spanish.	Educación. Religión. Elección.
--------	-----------------------------------	----------	--------------------------------------

Latin Substantives ending in tum, in the Spanish change um into o, as

Latin.	Ornamentum, Experimentum, Exemplum.	Spanish.	Ornaménto. Experimento. Exémplo.
--------	---	----------	--

Latin Adjectives ending in lis, in the Spanish cast away is, as

Latin.	Materialis, Finalis, Subtilis, Debilis, &c.	Spanish.	Material. Final. Sutil. Débil.
--------	--	----------	---

Latin Verbs become Spanish by cutting off e, in the Infinitive Mood, as

Latin.	Castigare, Amare, Tenere, Perdere, Sentire, Salire.	Spanish.	Castigár. Amár. Ténér. Perdér. Sentír. Salír.
--------	--	----------	--

Latin Adjectives in us, in the Spanish change it into o, as

Latin.	Malus, Bonus.	Spanish.	Málo. Buéno.
--------	------------------	----------	-----------------

Much more might be said to this Purpose, but these Rules are of no use to such as do not understand Latin, and such as do will easily perceive the Resemblance betwixt the Two Languages by what has been already said.

DIALOGUES

IN

SPANISH and ENGLISH.

Very useful for the better attaining of the Spanish Tongue.

DIALOGO Primero, pára levantarse por la mañana, y las cosas a éllo pertenecientes, entre un hidálgo llamado, Don Pedro y su criado Alonso, y un su Amigo llamado Don Juan, y una Ama.

- D. P. Oyes móço ?
A. Señor.
D. P. Que Hora es ?
A. Las cinco son dadas.
D. P. Levántate y ábre aquella ventána a ver si es de día,
A. Aún no es bién amanecido.
D. P. Pues áño, cómo dixíste que han dado las cinco ?
A. Señor, las cinco yó las conté, pero el relóx y la mañana no ándan a una.
D. P. O tu mientes, o el relóx miente, que el sol no puede mentir.
A. Mas vále que mienta yó, que no el año.
D. P. Que día haze ?
A. Señor nublado.
D. P. En los ojos déves tu de tener las nubes que el Cielo yó le véo cláro.
A. Pues no estóy ciego.
D. P. A'ntes créo que estás durmiendo toda vía.
A. * Sé, que no sóy Elefante que tengo de dormirme en pie.
D. P. Házte frío ?
A. Un Cerceganillo éntra por la Ventána que corta las narices.
D. P. Dáme de vestír que me quiero levantár.
A. A que, tan de mañana ?
D. P. A negociár, que tengo mucho que hazér oy.
A. Aún no estará nadie en pie.
D. P. Tu adevinas a tu provecho.
A. Que vestido se quiere poner vuestra merced ?
D. P. El de velárte, que dicen que es honra y provecho.
A. Que jubón ?
D. P. El de ráfo pespuntado.
A. He le aquí.
D. P. Majadero, pues el jubón me traes, ántes que la camisa, quíeres me motejár de açotado.
A. Aún no ha traydo las camisas la lavandéra.
D. P. Pues, hide puta yd por ellas.
A. El Ruyn de Róma, quando le nómbra, luego asóma, aquí viéne yá la labandéra.
D. P. Está enxúta ?
A. Cómo un cuérno.
D. P. No os he dicho, que no me traygáys éllas Comparaciones.
A. Eßlo fuéra, si fuéra v. m. Persóna sospechósa, que no se a de mentar la sóga, en cása del ahorcado.

The First Dialogue, of rising in the Morning, and things thereto belonging. Betwixt a Gentleman, call'd M. Peter, and his Servant *Alonso*, and another Friend of his, call'd M. John and a Nurse.

- P. DO you hear, Lad ?
A. Sir.
P. What a Clock is it ?
A. It has struck Five.
P. Rise, and open that Window, to see if it be Day.
A. It is not yet break of the Day.
P. Why then you Ass, did you say it had struck Five.
A. Sir, I told Five, but the Clock and the Morning do not go together.
P. Either you lye, or the Clock lies, for the Sun cannot lye.
A. It is better I should lye than the Tear.
P. What Weather is it ?
A. Cloudy Weather, Sir.
P. It is likely the Clouds are in your Eyes, for I see the Sky is clear.
A. For all that I am not blind.
P. I rather believe you sleep as you stand.
A. I know, I am no Elephant to sleep standing.
P. Is it cold Weather ?
A. Such a cold Northerly Wind comes in at the Window, that it bites off my Nose.
P. Give me my Cloths, for I will rise.
A. What to do, so Early ?
P. To go about Business, for I have much to do to Day.
A. No Body will be stirring yet.
P. You guess as you would have it.
A. What Sute will you wear to Day, Sir ?
P. That of the Fine Black Cloth, which they say, Is creditable and profitable.
A. What Doublet ?
P. That of the starch'd Sattin.
A. Here it is.
P. Blockhead, do you bring me the Doublet before my Shirt, will you reflect on me as if I had been † whipp'd ?
A. The Landress has not brought the Shirts yet.
P. Then go for them. You Son of a Whore.
A. Speak of the Devil and he appears, here comes the Landress.
P. It is dry ?
A. As dry as a Horn.
P. Have not I forbid you making such Comparisons.
A. That were right, if you lay under any Suspicion, ‡ for we ought not to name a Halter in the House a Man was hang'd out of

G G G G G

D. P.

* Alluding to the mistaken Notion that Elephants cannot lye down.
† Those that are whipp'd, put on their Doublets in hast before their Shirts, to save another Lash.
‡ Or, as the English Saying is, you must not Halt before a Cripple.

D. P. Dame las calças de Terciopelo Acuchilladas.
A. Aquí están Señor.
D. P. Están limpias? Mira bien si tienen algún punto suélto las thédias.
A. Esta es una de las tres cosas que Ganafa dezía, que el Hombre búscas con gran cuydado, y quando las ha hallado le pésa.
D. P. Y cuáles son las demás?
A. Una suziedad en la Cáma, y los cuernos, si su Mugér se los pone; pero éstas lánas están.
D. P. Calçamelas, dame el sayo de velarte, quel de ráxa es muy delgado para éste frío que háze.
A. Quiére, v. m. ponérse borzeguies?
D. P. No sinó çapatos y Pantúflos, por amor del lódo. Dame priméro Aguamános.
A. Señor el Agua está elada en el Járro.
D. P. Buena Señál. A. De que Señor? D. P. De Caránbanos.
A. Y aún de que háze frío.
D. P. Derrítelo en el Braséro. Dame entre tanto el espéjo y unas tixerás que quicéro adereçarme la bárba.
A. Aquí esta el estúche, dónde está todo, y también el péyne.
D. P. O que de cánas tengo, yá me vóy parándo viejo.
A. Señor, las navidades no se van en balde.
D. P. Por ciérto no tengo muchas, sinó como dizen en mi tierra, Cuernos y cánas no viénen por años.
A. Yá está buena ésta água, bien se puede vuestra merced lavar.
D. P. Pues dacá la fuente, y la toállá.
A. Quiére v. m. llevar cápa y górra, o herreruelo y sombrero?
D. P. No es aóra tiémpo de górra, dame el ferreruélo largo, y un sombrero de Fiéltro.
A. Que Espáda? Doráda, plateáda o Pavonáda?
D. P. No la quicéro, sino enbarnizada por si lloviére, Mira quién lláma a la puerta.
A. El Señor Don Juan es.
D. P. Corre abre presto.
D. J. Muy buenos Días de Díos a v. m. Señor Don Pedro.
D. P. O Señor Don Juan v. m. sea tan bien venido como los buenos años: Como está v. m?
D. J. Muy al Servicio de v. m. Está bueno?
D. P. Al Servicio de v. m. como estuviére, aunque algo achacoso.
D. J. Pues porqué madrúga tanto sinó anda bueno?
D. P. Porqué dizen los Médicos que para la salud, es bueno levantár de Mañana.
D. J. Esa salud téngansela ellos, que para mi éstos son los Días que devénos méter en cása, como díze el Refrán, o que los tengámos en la cáma, díxéra mejor.
D. P. Para dezír la verdad, yó mas lo hágo, por entender en mis Negócios.
D. J. Como le va a v. m. déellos?
D. P. Señor al servicio de v. m. mal bendito sea Díos.
D. J. Como así, no despáchan a v. m.
D. P. Si Señor, ¿ despéchanme. Mucácho tráenos de almorzar ántes que salgámos.
D. J. Yá yó he bevído una vez.
D. P. Beverá v. m. ótra que no le hará mal.
D. J. No, que no soy tan delicado como Judío en Viérnes.
A. Que quicren v. m. almorzar.
D. P. Tráe unos pastéles y un quartillo de cabrito assádo.
D. J. Que bien adereçado tiene v. m. éste aposénto Señor Don Pedro.
D. P. Señor Razonable como para un hidálgo pobre.
D. J. De dónde úvo v. m. ésta tapicería?
D. P. Señor, de Flándes vino.
D. J. También déven de ser de allá los liénços o Pintúras o Retrátos?
D. P. Algunos déellos, otros son de Italia.
D. J. De gentíl máno son por ciérto. Quanto le costó a v. m. éste Escritório?
D. P. Mas que vale, quarénta Ducados.
D. J. De que madéra es?
D. P. La coloráda es Caoba de la Havána y ésta négra es Ebano, la bláncó es Marfil.
D. J. Ciérto que está muy curióso, y muy bien asentáda la taraxéa.

P. Give me my slash'd Velvet Breeches.
A. Here they are, Sir.
P. Are they clean? See there be no Stitch fallen in the Stockins.
A. That is one of the Three Things which Ganafa said, a Man carefully seeks after, and is vex'd, when he has found them.
P. And what are the other Two?
A. Filth in the Bed, and Horns if they be of his own Wives grafting. But these Stockins are whole.
P. Draw them on, give me the Black Cloth Coat, for that of Cloth Rash is too thin for this cold Weather.
A. Will you wear Buskins?
P. No, but Shoves and Galloches, because of the Dirt: Give me first Water to wash my Hands.
A. Sir, the Water is frozen in the Pot.
P. A good Sign. A. Of what, Sir? P. Of Icicles.
A. And that is cold Weather too.
P. Thaw it in the Pan of Coals, in the mean while give me the Looking Glass and Scissers, for I will trim my Beard.
A. Here is the Case with all things in it, and the Comb.
P. What Abundance of grey Hairs I have, I begin to grow old already.
A. Sir, Years pass not over ones Head in vain.
P. Truly, I am not very old, but as they say in my Country, grey Hairs, and Horns come not by Age.
A. This Water is now in good Temper, you may wash if you please, Sir.
P. Then give me the Bason and Ewer and the Towel.
A. Will you wear a short Cloak and Cap, or long Cloak and Hat?
P. It is no Weather now for a Cap, give me a long Cloak and a Felt Hat.
A. What Sword, Gilt, Silver'd, or Sanguin'd.
P. No, I'll have the Varnish'd Sword, for fear it should rain: See who knocks at the Door.
A. It is Don John.
P. Run, open the Door quickly.
J. God give you Good Morrow Master Peter.
P. Oh Master John, you are as welcome as a good Year: How do you, Sir?
J. Much at your Service; are you well?
P. At your Service, Sir, however I am, tho' somewhat indispos'd.
J. Why then do you rise so early, if you are not well?
P. Because Physitians say, It is good for ones Health, to rise early in the Morning.
J. I wish them that Health, for as the Proverb says, these are the Days we ought to keep at home, or it were better said, we should keep them in Bed.
P. To tell you the Truth, I do it chiefly to follow my Business.
J. How goes your Business?
P. Sir, at your Service, ill enough God be prais'd.
J. How so, do they not dispatch you?
P. Yes, Sir, they fret me. Boy, bring us something to Breakfast before we go abroad.
J. I have drank a Glass already.
P. You shall drink another and it will do you no harm.
J. No, for I am not so nice * as a Jew on a Friday.
A. What will Your VVorships have for Breakfast?
P. Bring some small Pasties, and a Quarter of Roast Kid.
J. How well your Chamber is furnish'd Mr. Peter.
P. Sir, Tolerably as becomes a poor Gentleman.
J. Where had you these Tapestry Hangings?
P. Sir, they came from Flanders.
J. It is likely the Pictures came from thence too.
P. Some of them did, others came from Italy.
J. Truly they are of a good Hand. What did this Escritoir cost you?
P. More then it is worth, Forty Ducats.
J. What Wood is it?
P. The Red is ‡ Caoba of Havána, and this is Black is Ebony, the VWhite is Ivory.
J. Truly it is very curious, and the Fencering is very neatly done.

D. P. Aquí.

* Playing upon the Words Despachár, to Dispatch and Despechár, to tire, fret, or vex.
‡ Because the Jews in Spain, living like Christians, are very precise, to avoid being suspected
‡ Caoba, A rich Red Wood, brought out of the West-Indies, us'd in curious Work.

D. P. Aquí verá v. m. un bufete mejor labrado.
D. J. Adónde fué hecho?
D. P. El y las sillas vinieron de Salamanca.
D. J. Lo mejor le falta a v. m. en éste aposento:
D. P. Que es, por vida del Señor Don Juan?
D. J. Por lo que decía Don Juan Manuel, un sonecito de chapín.
D. P. Ya entiendo, por la muger lo dize v. m.
D. J. Por la misma.
D. P. A mi me parece que lo mejor que tiene es estar sin ella.
D. J. O Señor, no diga v. m. ésto, que es triste cosa la soledad.
D. P. Aténgome al que dize, que Vale mas solo que mal acompañado.
D. J. Pues no se entiende que a de ser mala.
D. P. Y adónde la hallaremos que sea buena?
D. J. Muchas ay muy buenas.
D. P. Es verdad, las que están enterradas.
D. J. De fuerte que quiere v. m. decir que la muger entonces es buena quando está muerta.
D. P. Digo Señor que cada loco con su tema, yó he dado aora en ésta.
D. J. Y se saldrá v. m. con ella, como el Rey con sus alcavilas.
D. P. Se dize que una buena mula, y una buena cabra, y una buena muger son tres, malas cucas.
Al. La méta está puésta bien se pueden sentar vs. ns. a almorzar.
D. P. Señor Don Juan tome v. m. aquella cabezera.
D. J. Buéno sería, ésto es por motejarme de viejo.
D. P. No, sinó por cumplir con la razón.
D. J. V. m. tome su lugar que yó tomaré el mio.
D. P. † Buéno es que venga a mi casa, quien mande en ella mas que yó.
D. J. O si por ay lo écha v. m. yo obedesco en su casa y fuera.
D. J. Yo soy el que tengo de servir como la razón me obliga. Muchacho dáca platos.
Al. Aquí están Señor.
D. P. De adónde truxiste éstos pasteles?
Al. De la mas limpia pastelera que ay en la ciudad.
D. P. Son de nuestra vezina la Hermosa?
Al. Si Señor.
D. P. Bien los puede v. m. comer sin asco, que de muger limpia son.
D. J. Mas que nunca lo fueran, nunca yó miro en misérias.
D. P. Pues ménos mirara, si fuera tan amigo déellos como yó.
D. J. Muy bien me saben, y lo mejor que yó les hallo es ser comida tan acorrida, que a qualquier hora que el hombre la quiera, la halla guisada.
D. P. Muchacho danos de beber que pica la pimienta.
Al. Que quiere, v. m. blanco o tinto?
D. P. Écha de lo blanco, que es mas caliente para por la mañana.
D. J. Y aún es mas saludable que lo tinto.
D. P. Brindo a v. m. Señor Don Juan.
D. J. Béo, a, v. m. las manos, haré la razón.
Al. Por qual taça quiere, v. m. beber, por la llana o por ésta hondilla.
D. J. Alonso amigo, avéis de saber que yó soy muy buen borracho y sé muy bien lo que me bévo, por ésto echadme por aquella taça llana.
D. P. Yo gusto mas de beber por ésta copa de vidrio que no por ninguna de las taças.
D. J. Señor, contra gustos no ay disputa.
D. P. Anfi es verdad, con ésta pierna de cabrito beberá, v. m. otra vez, y trae unas aceitunas para la terçera.
D. J. Ella ya se llamará comida y no almuérzo.
D. P. Porqué?
D. J. Porqué dizen a buen comer o mal comer, tres vezes se a de beber.
D. P. Ay dize nuestra madre * Celestina que está corrupta la letra, que por dezir treze dize tres.
D. J. Aora Señor bien esta lo hécho, no mas que perderemos gana de el comer.
D. P. Den nos a beber otras sendas de la calabriada.
D. J. Adónde yrémos?
D. P. Lo primero a la Yglesia, a encomendarnos a Dios.
D. J. Está muy bien, que por yr a la Yglesia, ni dar çevada, no se pierde jornada.
D. P. çierra aquel Cofre, pon en cobro éllas baratijas, llama al ama que barra y compóngale éste aposento.
Al. Tengo de yr acompañando a v. n.

P. Here may you see a Table, better wrought.
J. Where was it made?
P. That and the Chairs came from Salamanca.
J. The best thing is yet wanting in this Lodging.
P. What is it as God shall bless you Don John?
J. That which Don John Manuel said, the pretty Sound of a Womans Slipper.
P. Now I understand, you mean a Wife?
J. The very same.
P. I am of Opinion that it is much the better for being without her.
J. Good Sir, do not say so, for Lonesomeness is dismal.
P. I am for the old Saying, Better alone than in Bad Company.
J. But it is not to be suppos'd that she must be a Bad one.
P. And where shall we find a good one?
J. There are many very good.
P. 'Tis true, those that are bury'd.
J. So that you mean a Woman is good, when she is Bury'd.
P. Sir, I say every mad Man has his peculiar Madness, and this is mine at present.
J. And you will be as Absolute in it as the King is over his Taxes.
P. They say a good Mule, a good Goat, and a good Woman are Three unlucky Creatures.
A. The Table is cover'd, Your Worships may sit down to Breakfast.
P. Don John, do you sit down at the Upper end of the Table.
J. That would be reflecting on me as an Old Man.
P. Not so, but to do you Right.
J. Do you take your Place, Sir, and I will take mine.
P. 'Tis very well, that a Guest shall come to my House to have more Command in it than my self.
J. Nay, Sir, if you take it that way, I'll obey you in your House, and Abroad.
P. Sir, It is my Duty to serve, as Reason shows. Boy give us Plates.
A. Here they are, Sir.
P. From whence did you bring these Pies?
A. From the cleanest Pastry woman in this City.
P. What from our fair Neighbour?
A. Yes Sir.
P. Sir, You may eat them without any Scruple, for they are made by a cleanly Woman.
J. No matter if they were not, for I never stick at small matters.
P. You would mind it less, if you were as great a Lover of them as I am.
J. I like them very well, and the best thing I think belongs to them is that they are such ready Meat, that whensoever a Man wants, it is dress'd to his Hand.
P. Boy, give us Drink, for the Pepper be es.
A. Which will you have, Sir, White or Red.
P. Fill of the White, which is warmer for the Morning.
J. And it is wholesomer than the Red.
P. I drink to you, Don John.
J. I thank you, Sir, I will pledge you.
A. Out of which Dish, will Your Worship drink, out of this plain one, or this little deep one.
J. Friend Alonso you must know, I am a very good Drinker, and know what I drink, therefore fill me that plain Dish.
P. I like to drink out of this Glass better than out of any of the Dishes.
J. Sir, there is no arguing against Fancy.
P. It is so Sir, This Leg of Kid will make you drink again. Bring us some Olives for the Third Glass.
J. That may be call'd a Dinner, and not a Breakfast.
P. Why?
J. Because they say, whether you eat a good Meal or a Bad one you must drink three times.
P. There our Mother † Celestina says, the Text is vitiated, for it says, three times instead of Thirteen.
J. We have done very well, Sir, no more, for we shall lose our Stomacks to our Dinner.
P. Give each of us another Glass of the Red and White Wine mix'd together.
J. Whither shall we go?
P. First to the Church to commend our selves to God.
J. That is right, for neither going to Church, nor giving a Horse Provender, hinder a journey.
P. Shut that Chest, put up safe this Trumpery, call the Nurse to sweep and put the Room in order.
A. Shall I wait on you, Sir.

G g g g g 2

D. P. No.

† A courteous way of obliging the Stranger to take the Upper-hand.

* Celestina, The Name of a famous Baud, of whom there is a particular Book.

D. P. No, finó quedate en casa, ayúda al áma y limpia todos mis vestidos y ponéd la casa en orden y a las onze llévame el caballo a Palacio.

Al. Está muy bien Señor yó lo haré así.

D. P. Este mi criado Señor Don Juan, es como malilla que hágo del lo que quiero.

D. J. Y aún anda v. m. en lo cierto para ser bien servido, que quando hombre tiene muchos criados, unos por otros nunca hazen cosa a deléchas.

D. P. El me sirve de mayordómo, de repostéro, de Maestre-sala, de guardarópa, de páje, y de lacayo, y a vézes de despenféro.

D. J. El parece buen hijo.

D. P. Bueno, Señor, estan bueno que a ser mas, no valiera nada, sola una falta tiene.

D. J. Qual es?

D. P. Que es grandísimo enemigo del agua.

D. J. Eso harálo, por lo bien que le sabe el vino, pero éssa no se puede llamar falta, sino sobra.

D. P. Muchácho cierra la puerta, con la llave, que a puerta cerrada el Diáblo se buélve.

Al. A'ma, tráyga un caldéro de agua y una escoba, regarémos y barrerémos éste aposénto.

Am. Tóma priméro ésta ropa blanca que tráxo la labandera.

Al. Aguárde, facaré la Memoria para vér si falta algo.

Am. Adónde la tienes?

Al. Aquí está en mi faltriquera.

Am. Lee la pues.

Al. Memoria de la ropa de mi ámo que llevó la lavandera en diéz de Março de 1699. Primeramente quatro Camisas con sus cuellos de lechuguilla.

Am. Aquí están A. dos sábanas, dos almohadas de cáma, dos pares de calcónillos, tres de calcetas.

Al. Aquí están.

Al. Una dozéna de pares de escarpines.

Am. No ay aquí mas que ocho.

Al. Pues quatro faltan; a la labandera pedirle he que de cuenta déellos, y si élla los perdió que los pague.

Am. Anda, que valen quatro escarpines viejos y rotos?

Al. Yten, mas dos escofietas y quatro tocadores, média dozéna de pañizuelos de narizes.

Am. Aquí está todo.

Al. Dos mélas de mantéles, y diéz servillétas.

Am. Aquí están.

Al. Tres toallas, y un frutéro, y dos cuéllos de encáje con sus puños.

Am. Todo está aquí que nada falta.

Al. Pues doblémos lo, y pongámos lo en el árca.

Am. Cómo me llamáys para que os ayúde a ésto, no me llamárades para que os ayudara al almuérzo.

Al. Allí tengo guardados unos escamóchos que sobraron a mi ámo.

Am. Quiero priméro barrer ésta sala y aderezárla.

Al. Entre tanto limpiaré yó la ropa, sabes de la escobilla?

Am. Vélaallí colgada de aquél clávo, que si fuera perro yá te uviéra mordido.

Al. O quanto polvo tiene ésta cápa?

Am. Sacúdela priméro con una vara.

Al. Ama, mas que bien hechos están éstos calcónes?

Am. También entiendo yó de ésto, como puérca de freno.

Al. Pues que entiendes.

Am. Lo que a mi me impórta. Si tu preguntáras por una baquiná, una saya entera, una ropa, un manto, o un cuérpo, una gorguera, de una toca, y cosas semejantes, supiérate yó responder.

Al. De manera que no sabe leer, mas de por el Libro de su aldea.

Am. Quieres tu, que sea yó, como el embidiólo, que su cuidado es en lo que no le va ni le viene.

Al. Siempre es virtud saber, aunque sean cosas que parece que no nos impórta.

Am. Bien sé yó, que tu sabes hazer una bellaqueria, y ésta no es virtud.

Al. El saberla hazer no es malo, el usarla si.

Am. Siempre oý dezir que quién las sabe las tiene.

Al. No finó que quién ha las hechas ha las sospéchas.

Am. Pues velláco que he hecho yó?

Al. No mas de hazérme repañar algunas vézes.

Am. No me res tu ocación.

Al. Entonces muchas merçedes, quando le doy ocación, es mejor que me perdóne, que quando no se la doy, poca amistad me haze.

Am. Ahora Hermámo déxate de Retóricas has lo que tu ámo te manda.

P. No, but stay at home, help the Nurse and brush all my Cloaths, and set the House in order, and at Eleven of the Clock bring my Horse to Court.

A. Very well Sir, I will do it.

P. This my Servant John, is as the Don Malilla at Home, for I make of him what I will.

J. And so you are sure to be well serv'd, for when a Man has many Servants, one leaves it to another, and nothing is done right.

P. He serves me for Steward, Butler, Sewer, Wardrobe, Keeper, Page, Footman, and sometimes Caterer.

J. He looks like a good Lad.

P. Good, Sir, he is so good, that if he were better, he were good for nothing, he has but one Fault.

J. What is that?

P. That he is a Mortal Enemy to Water.

J. I suppose he is so, because he likes the Taste of Wine, but that is rather an Excess than a Defect.

P. Boy, lock the Door, for when the Devil finds the Door fast he goes his way.

A. Nurse, bring a Kettle of Water and a Broom, we will sprinkle, and sweep this Chamber.

N. First take clean Linnen the Landress brought.

A. Stay, I'll take out the Note to see if any be wanting.

N. Where is it?

A. Here it is in my Pocket.

N. Read it then.

A. A Note of my Masters Linnen, which the Landress had the Tenth of March, 1699. First four Shirts, with their ruff Bands to them.

N. Here they are. Al. A pair of Sheets, two Pillows, two pair of Drawers, three pair of Thread Stockings.

N. Here they are.

A. A Dofen pair of Socks.

N. There are but Eight here.

A. Then there wants four, I will call the Landress to an account for them, and if she has lost them, she must pay for them.

N. Go your ways, what are four old Ragged Socks worth?

A. Item, Two Night-Caps, and Four Night Neckcloths, half a Dofen of Handkerchiefs.

N. Here is all.

A. Two Table-cloths, and Ten Napkins.

N. Here they are.

A. Three Towels, and one † Fruit Cloath, and Two Ruff Bands wrought with their Ruffles.

N. All is here, nothing is wanting.

A. Then let us fold, and lay it up in the Chest.

A. As you call me to help to do this, could not you have call'd me to help you at Breakfast?

A. There I have sav'd some Fragments which my Master left.

N. I will first sweep this Room, and set it in order.

A. In the mean while I'll brush the Cloths. Do you know where the Brush is?

N. See there it hangs on the Nail, if it were a Dog it would not have bit you.

A. What a deal of Dust there is in this Cloak?

N. Beat it out first with a Wand.

A. Nurse, how well these Breeches are made.

N. I have as much still in that, as a Sow has in a Bridle.

A. What is it, you have Skill in then?

N. That which belongs to me. If you had ask'd about an Upper-Petticoat, a Skirt, a Gown, a Veil, or a pair of Stays, a Gorget, a Womans-head, or the like, I should know what Answer to make you.

A. So that you can read in no Book, but your own.

N. Would you have me be like the Envious Man, who troubles himself about what does not concern him.

A. It is always commendable to know, tho' the things be such as do not seem to belong to us.

N. I am sure you know how to play a Knavish Trick, and that is not commendable.

A. To know how to do it is not Evil, but to use it.

N. I have always heard † they who have Skill Play upon the Instrument.

A. No but they that are naught, are jealous of others.

N. Why you Knave what have I done?

A. Nothing, but make me fret and vex myself sometimes.

N. Don't you provoke me.

A. Then I thank you hartily, when I provoke you, then it is you should forgive me, for when I give no Provocation, where is the Kindness.

N. Now Brother, leave your Rhetorick, and do what your Master bid you.

Al.

* A commanding Card, as Pawn a Leo, that serves for any other.

† Fruit Cloth to cover the Fruit when it is carried to the Table.

‡ They that know how to play the Knave do it.

Al. * Si haré aunque bien créo que no por ésto me tengo de asentár con el a la méta.
Ana. Aloménos escufarás de que el no te afiente en el rábo.
Al. Yo vóy a enfillár el caválo, a diós parédes hásta la buélta.

Diálogo Segundo, En el qual, se trata de comprar y vendér joyas y ótras cosas entre un Hidalgo llamado Tomas, y su mugér Margarita, y un Mercader y un Platéro.

Th. **A** Dónde queréis que vámos Señora?
Ma. Vámos a la platería, y Compraremos algunas piéças de plata.
Th. Y de allí?
Ma. Yrémos a la lonja pára comprar algunas cosas.
Th. En el nómbre de Diós, entrémos en ésta tienda.
Ma. Plégue a el, sea con pié derécho.
Th. A Señor, guarde Diós a v. m.
Pl. Y venga con vuestras merçédes.
Th. Mánden nos moltrár, algunas buenas piéças.
Pl. Que géneros quier v. m. táças, cópas o jarros, fuéntes, platos, y escudillas, es lo mas necesario.
Th. Y también cópas de salva, y saleros, vinagéras.
Pl. Olá móço, táca aquí toda éssa pláta de el árca.
Ma. Veámos aquéllos candeléros y despaviladéras.
Th. Si éstos brazerillos de méta estuviéran Sinceládos fueran mejores.
Pl. Otros dízen, que la sinceladura es allegadéro de miérda, hablando con Perdon de vuestras merçédes.
Ma. No véo aquí águamanil ninguno.
Pl. Aquí está uno sobredorado y singeládo con su fuente de la misma labór.
Th. Yó quihéa toda la baxilla de una misma labór, que no diferenciarán unas piéças de ótras.
Pl. Por ésto dízen, que tantas opiniones ay cómo cabeças: Otros dízen que la variedad es la que agrada.
Th. Es verdad però la variedad ha de ser de cosas entéras porqué hazér una cápa de remiéndos, no puede agradár a nadie.
Pl. Conciértese v. m. conmigo en el preço, que yo se la daré acabáda dentro de pocos Días, de la hechúra que la quisiere.
Ma. Siémpre en las tardanças ay peligro, y vále mas † páxaro en máno que buéytre bolándo.
Th. Pues escója de ay v. m. les piéças que mas le agradáren.
Ma. Este Salpimentéro y ésta cópa con su sobre cópa, y éste pichél, y ésta calderéta, y ésta porcelána sean las primeras.
Th. A cómo hémos de dár por el ‡ márco de éstas piéças?
Pl. Por el márco de las llánas me ha de dár v. m. a çien, reales por las singeládas, a quínze Ducádos y por las dorádas a treynta Ducádos.
Th. Si el pedir fuera dár, no se avía hécho mála haziénda oy, però de el dicho a el hécho ay gran trécho.
Pl. Aloménos no lo daré yó por lo, que v. m. me ha ofregido hásta agora.
Th. Está tan cáro, que yo no sé que le ofréza si no es una a baxa.
Pl. Ella yó la Dançaré después que v. m. áya tañido su áltá.
Th. Mi mas áltá Señor, es a seis Ducádos la llána, y a çien reales, la singeláda, y la doráda, a véinte Ducádos.
Pl. Muy bién despachádo éya yó, mas me tiénen a mi de cósta.
Th. Pues Señor torne a Dançar a vér en que pára.
Pl. En cada género, le quitaré a v. m. dos Ducádos y no mas.
Th. Muy mal Dançó. v. m. no le tóco mas.
Pl. Pues yó le asegúro a v. m. que no lo hálle mas barato en la calle.
Th. Cállle, que si hallaré, quedónde una puérta se cierra ciénte se abren.
Al. Si ha de valér mi vóto, dezirle he.
Pl. Dígale v. m. que le soy muy devóto.
Ana. Pues otro tanto cómo baxó el platéro, súba el Señor Tomás y no se hable mas.

A. So I will, and yet I believe I shall not sit down at Table with him.
N. At least you will Save his laying it on your Bones.
A. I go to saddle the Horse, Fare wel untill my Return.

The Second Dialogue, which treats of Buying and Selling Jewels and other things, between a Gentleman call'd Thomas and his Wife Margaret, and a Shopkeeper and a Goldsmith.

Th. **W** Hether will you have us go Madam?
Ma. Let us go to the Goldsmiths shops, and we will buy some Pieces of Plate.
Th. And from thence?
Ma. We will go to the Exchange to buy some things.
Th. In the Name of God let us go in this Snop.
Ma. I pray God it be lucky.
Th. Master, God save you.
Go. And God be in your Company.
Th. Shew us some good Pieces.
Go. What sorts will you please to see, Tasters, Cups or Pots, Basons, Dishes or Parringers, these are most for use.
Th. And Cups with Covers, and Salt-sellers, and Couters.
Go. Here young Man take out all the Plate in the Chest.
Ma. Let us see those Candlesticks and Snuffers.
T. If those Chasindishes for the Table were engrav'd they were better.
G. Others say, that the Graving only serves to gather Dirt, with Respect to your Worships.
M. I see no Enver here.
G. Here is one Gilt, and grav'd with the Basen of the same work.
T. I would have all a Cupbord of Plate of one sort of work, that no Piece might differ from another.
G. Therefore they say, so many Men so many Minds, others say Variety is pleasing.
T. It is true, but that Variety must be in entire things for to make a Cloak of several Patches, can please no Body.
G. Let us agree upon the Price, I'll get it for you in a few Days, of what Fashion you please.
M. Delays are always dangerous, and a Bird in Hand is worth Two in the Bush.
T. Then chuse what you like best here.
M. This Salt and Pepper Box, and this Cup with a Cover, and this Pitcher, and this little Silver Kettle, and this Porrenger, in the first Place.
Th. What must we give a (†) Mark for these Pieces?
G. You must give me an Hundred Royals a Mark for the Plain, Fifteen Ducats for those that are engrav'd, and Thirty for the Gilt.
Th. If Asking were giving, you had made no ill Days work of it, but Saying and Doing are Two Things.
G. At least I'll not give it for what you have offer'd me yet.
Th. You are so deer that I know not what to offer you, but an (a) Abatement.
G. I'll Dance that when Your Worship has play'd the (b).
Th. My highest is Six Ducats, the Plain an Hundred Royals the engrav'd, and the Gilt Twenty Ducats.
G. I should make a good Bargain of that, they cost me more.
Th. Then, Sir, Dance again, and let us see what will come of it.
G. I will abate Two Ducats in every sort, and no more.
Th. You Danç'd very ill, I'll play no more to you.
G. Then I assure Your Worship you will not find cheaper in the Street.
Th. Do not talk so, for I shall find it, for where one Door shuts an Hundred open (c).
Ma. If my Word may be of any Weight, I'll speak.
G. Speak Madam, for I have a great respect for you.
Ma. Then as much as the Goldsmith demand, so much let Master Thomas rise, and let there be no more Words.

Pl. Por

* A Spanish Proverb, Do what you are bid, and sit down at the Table with your Master. To show that good Servants deserve to be Honour'd by their Masters.
 † The Spanish is, A Bird in Hand is better than a Vulture flying.
 ‡ A Mark is Eight Ounces.
 (a) The Spanish Word Baxa is an Abatement, and an allusion to a Dance so call'd.
 (b) Another Spanish Dance so call'd.
 (c) A Spanish Proverb.

Pl. Porq. è su palabra de v. m. no buélva atrás.
 Th. No quería v. m. mas, óra péselo, pesár málo le dé Dios al Diablo.
 Pl. L'éven lo a casa que allá lo pesarémós.
 Th. Mógo cánga con todo y lléva lo a casa.
 Pl. Han de bolverse luego vuestras mercedes?
 Th. No hasta de aquí a dos horas, que vamos a comprar ótras cosas.
 Pl. Si v. m. es Servido que le acompañe, hazérlo he.
 Ma. Guárde Dios a v. m. que no querémós mas compañía.
 Th. En ninguna cosa gálto el Dinéro, de mejor gána que en pláta.
 Ma. Lo que se gasta en pláta no es gastar, sinó trocar piéças chicas por piéças grandes.
 Th. Y también poiqué cábe en élla lo que dizen que (a) no cábe en un sacco que es honra y provécho.
 Ma. Si, porqué si hombre se quiere Servir con vidrio o China, o Bálro, mas cuéltalo que se quiebra éntre año que la hechúra de la Pláta.
 Th. Y con una baxilla que Hombre compra una vez, tiéne para Hijos Niétos, y Bisniétos.
 Ma. Aora vámos a la Joyería.
 Th. Éste es un camino que yó hágo de muy mala gána.
 Ma. Porqué razón?
 Th. Porqué éstas joyas son cómo las donzéllas, que miéntras están encerradas son de mucho valor, y en sacandolas fuera, le pierden todo y no valen náda.
 Ma. Si peió, lo que se úsa no se escúsa.
 Th. (b) Al mal úslo quebrátle la piérna.
 Ma. No queráis Señor poner vos, (c) puértas al campo ni corregir el mundo, que así le hallásteys y así le havéis de dexár.
 Th. (d) Óra pués corra el río por do suéle, pués se arrendó la renta con éstas condiciones.
 Ma. Entrémós en ésta tienda que es la mas rica.
 Ma. Que manda v. m. Señor cavalléro, que ha menestér?
 Th. Yó ninguna cosa, ésta Señóra, muchas.
 Ma. Pués pída su merçed, que todo se le dará aquí a muy buen preço.
 Ma. Muéstre me acá algúnos tocados, guirnaldivas, rapósos, rándas, desfilados, tocas de todas fuertes, y también venga la Olanda delgada, Cambray, y ótras fuertes de liénços.
 Ma. Éntre v. m. que todo lo verá aquí.
 Ma. Todo ésto es óbratósca, mas prima la quiéro.
 Ma. Pués en ésta cáxa verá v. m. el primór del mundo, todo es obra de Milán.
 Th. Óbra de Milán véeme y no me tángas.
 Ma. Náda de ésto me contémta.
 Ma. É pántome cómo se caído v. m. siendo tan mal contentadiza.
 Th. Fué porqué vído al Nóbio de nóche, y cómo dizen entónçes todos los gátos son párdos.
 Ma. Muéstreme ótra mejor óbra si tiéne, y déxese de preguntár (e) cuántos años téngo.
 Ma. Aora ésta es la última pruéva, ve aquí v. m. óbra de argentea, ve allí de aljófar, éstotra de abalório, y ésta de pérlass, escójacómo Péras en Tabáque.
 Ma. Porciérto en ruín háto, púco ay que escogér.
 Ma. A ésto lláma v. m. ruín, créo, que es de peór Condición que el Philósofo, Demócrito, que no halló cosa en el mundo que no tuviese falta.
 Th. Ésto sin Demócrito lo digo yó, que no ay cosa perféta en el Mundo.
 Ma. Ésto verificarse ha, en cosas naturales, que en las de el arte puede avér perfección, cada una en su género.
 Th. Pués que pensáis vos que es el arte, sinó imitador de la naturaléca, y si en la naturaléca no ay Perfección ménos la avrá en el arte su imitador.
 Ma. Yó Señor no soy Philósofo, ni quiéro contendér con v. m. mis Mercaderías querria que tuviesen su Perfección en el preço.
 Ma. Si no le tiénen en su valor, no le pueden tener en el preço.
 Ma. Aora Señóra, véa v. m. lo que mas le contémta, y tómelo, que no téngo ótra cosa mejor.
 Ma. Éste tocado, éste cuélllo, ésta gargantilla de Pérlass, éste regalillo, y éste avañillo, éstos dos pares de guantes de Flóres, y ésta pretina, me parécen bién, todo lo demás no.

Go. Madam, your VWord shall not fall in vain.
 Th. You could desire no more, weigh it then, and God give the Devil Ill Luck.
 Go. Carry it home and we will weigh it there.
 Th. Young Man, take it all up, and carry it home.
 Go. Do you go back presently?
 Th. Not these Two Hours, for we are going to buy other things.
 Go. If you please I should wait on you, I'll do it.
 Ma. God keep you, we will have no more Company.
 Th. There is nothing I am so well pleas'd to lay out Money on as upon Plate.
 Ma. VVhat is laid out in Plate, is not spent, it is on'y changing of some Pieces for great ones.
 Th. And because it is capable of that which they say can't be in the same Bag, that is Honour and Profit.
 Ma. It is so, for if a Man will make use of Glass, China or Earthen VWare, there is more broken in one Year, than pays for the Fashion of the Plate.
 Th. And a Cupbord a Man buys once, serves for his Children, Grand-Children, and Great Grand-Children.
 Ma. Now let us go to the Milleners.
 Th. That is a Place I don't much Care to go to.
 Ma. VVhat is the Reason?
 Th. Because Milleners VWare is like Maids, who while they are kept up are of much Value, but as soon as they are carry'd Abroad they lose all, and are worth nothing.
 Ma. Yes, but there is no being out of the Fashion.
 Th. Bad Customs or Fashions should have their Legs broke.
 Ma. I would not have you Sir, pretend to hedge in the Cuckoo, or to mend the VVorld, for as you found it, so you must leave it.
 Th. VVhy then let the River run as it was wont, since the Farm was taken upon these Conditions.
 Ma. Let us go into this Shop, which is the best stockt.
 Mi. VVhat is your VVill, Sir, what do you lack?
 Th. I want nothing, but this Lady wants several things.
 Mi. Then let her Name them, and she shall have all things at reasonable Rates.
 Ma. Shew me some VVomens Heads, high Heads, white Crape, Laces, cut VVork, all sorts of Head-Dresses, as also fine Holland, Cambrick and other sorts of Linnen.
 Mi. Be pleas'd to walk in, and you shall see all here.
 Ma. All this is Course, I would see finer.
 Mi. Then in this Box you will see the Rarity of the World, it is all Milanesse Work.
 Th. Milanesse Work is a meer Noli me tangere.
 Ma. I like none of this.
 Mi. Madam, I wonder how you marry'd being so hard to please.
 Th. It was because she saw the Bridegroom by Night, and as they say, then all Cats are grey.
 Ma. Shew me some better work, if you have any, and ask no Questions.
 Mi. This is the last Trial, here is VVork garnish'd with Silver, this with Seed Pearl, this with Bugles, and this with Pearl, take your Choice, as you would among Pears in a Basket.
 Ma. Truly there is little to choose among such bad Cattle.
 Mi. Do you call this bad, I believe you are of a worse Disposition then the Philosopher Democritus, who found nothing in the World, without a Fault.
 Th. I say the same without Democritus, that there is nothing perfect in the VVorld.
 Mi. That is verif'd in natural things, for in the things of Art every one may have a Perfection in its kind.
 Th. Why do you think that Art does any more than imitate Nature, and if in Nature there is no Perfection, much less will there be any in Art, which intimates it.
 Mi. Sir, I am no Philosopher, nor will I contend with Your VVorship, I wish my Goods had their Perfection in the Price.
 Ma. If they have it not in their Value, they cannot have it in their Price.
 Mi. Well, Madam, see what you like and take it, for I have no better.
 Ma. This Dress, this Band, this Pearl Necklace, this Muff, and this Fan, these two pair perfum'd Gloves, and this Girdle I like of, the rest I do not.

Th. VVhat

(a) A Spanish Proverb, to express to living high and honourably is expensive, or that a Niggard cannot be honour'd.
 (b) An Expression to signify that we should break ill Customs or Fashions.
 (c) The Spanish is to put Gates to the Field, to do Impossibleities.
 (d) Let things be as they are, since VVives must be contented.
 (e) Do not ask how old I am.

Th. Quanto monta todo esto?
Mi. Toda monta trescientos reales.
Th. Trescientos años este de un lado quien tal diere.
Mi. Pues porque no le alance a v. m. esta maldición doscientos, y ochenta.
Th. No entiendo bien esta cuenta.
Mi. Dos veces ciento y quarenta.
Ma. Buena está la cópla, no han de ser mas que doscientos y cinquenta en todo.
Me. Con v. m. el perdér es ganar, pues manda que sea así, yó no hablaré mas palabra.
Th. Para que quiere hablar mas, si con las habladas ha hecho su agosto.
Mi. Por cierto Señor de este agosto, poca cosecha he cogido.
Th. Señor si hiziéra buena sementera cogiera mas.
Mi. Aún tengo aquí otras muchas mercaderías muy curiosas que v. m. no ha visto.
Ma. Que son?
Mi. Sartillas, Joyeles, Gintas de resplandor, Brocadetes, Rodetes, Cofias de O'ro, Arandelas, Alcañuellos, Gorgueras de Red, Camisas Labradas, Gargantillas de Perlas, y Ambar todo género de Aceite y de Perfumes, véa v. m. si le contenta algo.
Ma. Otro Día vernemos mas de espacio para ver todo esto.
Th. Pareceme Señor que es vuestro Oficio, como el de los torneros engaña muchachos y saca Dineros.
Mi. Pues es mi Señora Margarita muchacho.
Th. Basta que sea engañada.
Mi. A fee que no ha de saber poco quien la ha de engañar.

Th. Engañarse ha ella misma a si misma.
Mi. Como?
Sh. Dando Dineros por estas Bugerías que relúzen y no es oro todo, y quando vaya a casa, se hallará con (a) nada entre dos Platos.

Mi. Para que es el Dinero sino para luzirse con ello.
Th. (b) Se que esto, aunque relúze no lúze.
Ma. Ya os he dicho Señor. que os váis al corriente de la demás gente, y pues os casásteys como los otros passád por donde los otros, no andéis por los estrémos que todo Hombre estremado no está un dedo de loco, estas son cargas de el Casamiento.
Th. La ayuda de el escaravájo, que dexa la Carga quando le ayudan.
Ma. Ahora Señor estas son Pendencias que se han de reñir en casa vámonos.
Th. Vámonos Señora, tomad vuestro Dinero Señor Mercader.
Mi. Yo quedo muy contento yó beso a v. m. las manos y véa si me manda otra cosa.
Th. Que con salud que tengamos, nunca mas nos veamos.
Mi. Por cierto Señor, y no soy tan ingrato, que cada día querría ver a v. m. por mi casa.
Th. Yo creo que querríades ver mi bolsa mas no a mi.
Mi. No soy tan codicioso como a v. m. le parece.
Th. No digo yó que lo soys, pero apostaré que queréis mas un real de a quatro, que uno de a dos.
Mi. Por adivino le podrian a v. m. castigar.
Th. Lo que con los ojos veo con el dedo lo adivino.
Ma. A Dios Mercader.
Mi. Beso a v. m. las manos mi Señora.
Ma. Vámonos ahora a la lonja a comprar sedas.
Th. Que queréis comprar Señora?
Ma. Que, Terciopelo, Raso, Damasco, Tafetan, Rico, Gorgoran, Chamelote, Lanillas, para vestiros a vos y a mi.
Th. Para esto es menester otro Día, ya es tarde vamos a comer que mañana yremos a comprar esto.
Ma. Vámonos pues, aunque yó mas quisiera que quedara oy todo hecho, que no tener que salir mañana otra buelta.

Th. Andad que bien os holgáis de passear un rato, para que me queréis hazer entender de el Cielo cebolla?

Ma. No seáis malicioso que no medraréis.
Th. Muchacho corre, llama al platéro que venga a pesar la plata y por su Dinero.

Th. What does all this come to?
Mi. All comes to Three Hundred Royals.
Th. May be by Three Hundred Years on one side that gives it.
Mi. Then that the Curse may not light on you, Two Hundred and Four score.
Th. I dont understand that Reckning.
Mi. Twise an Hundred and Forty.
Ma. Well said, I'll not give one Cross more than Two Hundred and Fifty.
Mi. Madam, to lose with you is gain, since you will have it so, I'll not make another Word.
Th. What need you say any more, since what you have said has prov'd your Harvest.
Mi. Truly, Sir, this Harvest has yielded me no great Crop.

Th. If you had Sow'd well, you had reap'd more.
Mi. I have several other curious Commodities, you have not yet seen, Madam.
Ma. What are they?
Mi. Little Strings of Beads, Jewels, Silver Ribbons, Bastard Brocards, Borders, Hoods, wrought with Gold, Bands Frames to starch Ruffs, Net Ruffs, wrought Smocks, Pearl and Amber Necklaces, all sorts of Washes and Perfumes, see what pleases you Madam.
Ma. We will come another Day, more at Leisure to see all that.
Th. Your Trade seems to me like the Turners, to wheedle Children, and suck the Money out of their Pockets.
Mi. Why is my Madam Margaret a Boy?
Th. It is enough that she is wheedled.
Mi. By my Troth he must be cunning enough, who can put upon her.
Th. She'll take care to put upon herself.
Mi. How?
Th. Giving Money for these Toys, which shine and yet are not all Gold, and when she gets home, it will appear she has got as good as nothing, like an empty Dish cover'd over.
Mi. What is Money made for, but to make a Shew with it.
Th. I know this, does not shine tho' it glitters.
Ma. Sir, I have already advis'd you, not to strive against the Stream, but since like other Men you are marry'd, éen do as other Men do, and do not affect to be singular, for any Man that is singular, is not above an Inch from being mad; these are the Consequences of Matrimony.
Th. It is like the Beetles Help, who leaves his burden when another comes to his Assistance (c).
Ma. Well, Sir, That Quarrel must be decided at home. Let us go.
Th. Let us go, Madam, take your Money Master Millener.
Me. I am very well satisfy'd, and kiss your Hands, see if there any thing else I can serve you in.
Th. God bless us, and may we never see one another more.
Me. Truly, Sir, I am not so ungrateful, but that I should be glad to see Your Worship every Day.
Th. I believe you would rather see my Purse than me.
Me. I am not so covetous as you think me.
Th. I do not say you are, but I dare lay a VVager, you had rather have four Royals than Two.
Me. Sir, you may be taken up for a Conjuror.
Th. What I see with my Eyes I can guess at by Fingers.
Ma. God be with you, Mr. Millener.
Me. Lady I kiss your Hands.
Ma. Now let us go to the Exchange to buy Silks.
Th. What would you buy Madam?
Ma. Velvet, Satin, Damask, Tafata, Plush, Gorgram, Chamlet, Sarge, to cloath you and my self.
Th. We must take another Day for that, It is now late, let us go to Dinner, and to Morrow we will go to buy it.
Ma. Let us go then, Tho' I had rather it were all done to Day, than to be forc'd to come abroad again, to Morrow.
Th. Go, go, you like a little VValking well enough, why would you make me believe the (d) the Moon is made of a Green Cheese?
Ma. Be not malicious, for you'll never thrive.
Th. Boy, run call the Goldsmith, to come weigh the Plate, and take his Money.

Diálogo

(a) Nothing between Two Dishes, the Spanish Frost.
 (b) These Things are gaudy but not Substantial.
 (c) They say, when the Beetle would dray any thing to his Holl, if another comes to help him, he quits it, and he compares Matrimony to it.
 (d) The Spanish Verbatim is, the Sky is made of an Onion.

Diálogo Tercero, De un combite, entre cinco Cavalleros Amigos, llamados Guzmán, Rodrigo, Don Lorenzo, Mendoza, y Osorio, un Maestresala, y un Paje, en el qual se trata, de cosas pertenecientes a un combite, con otras Pláticas, y Dichos agudos.

- G. **O** Lá, está ay algún Paje?
- P. Señor.
- G. Sabes a casa de Don Rodrigo?
- P. Si Señor.
- G. Pues vé allá, dile que le Bésó las manos, y que si le parece ora de que nos veámos.
- P. Aquí está un criado de el Señor Don Lorenzo.
- G. Entre.
- Cr. Don Lorenzo mi Señor, bésa a v. m. las manos y embía a saber si está en casa, porque tiene un negocio que tratar con v. m.
- G. Que bésó a su merced las manos, y que yo fuera a la suya, a besarlas sinó tuviéra una ocupación forzosa que esperar, la qual también toca a su merced, que si viniere, será el bien venido y se tratará de todo.
- Cr. Bésó a v. m. las manos.
- G. Andá con Dios. Olá dezid al maestresala que haga poner éssas mesas, que vernán yá los convidados.
- M. Señor v. m. cómo se quiere servir oy, a la Italiana, o a la Françeza, o a la Inglesá, o a la Flaménca, o a la Tudésca?
- G. De todos éssos estrémos me sacád un médio, no quéro tantas ceremonias, como el Italiano, ni quéro tanta curiosidad como el Françés, ni quéro tanta abundancia como el Inglés, ni quéro que la comida sea tan larga como el Flaménco, ni tan húmeda como el Tudésco, mas de todos éstos estrémos, componéme un médio a a la Española.
- M. Así se hará como v. m. lo manda.
- G. Vuéltro mayor cuidado sea que la comida sea caliente y la bevída fría.
- M. Que vinos quiere v. m.
- G. De todos géneros, Blanco, Tinto, Halóque, Claréte, Candia, Ribadavia, san Martín, Toro, y Sídra, porque áya de todo.
- P. Aquí viene el Señor Don Rodrigo.
- G. O Señor, v. m. y los buenos años.
- R. Bésó a v. m. las manos.
- G. Cómo ésta, v. m. parece que coxea.
- R. Díme un Gólpe al apeár del Caválo en ésta espinilla.
- G. En ora mala sea, veámos si es algo.
- R. No Señor, sinó que es como dizen dolor de codo, dolor de espóso, duele mucho y dura poco.
- G. Mas vale así.
- R. Cómo tiene, v. m. a mi Señora Dóna María y a toda su casa?
- G. A Servicio de v. m. aunque élla, por no avérme envidia dixo, que pues yo comía con mis Amigos, élla se quería yr a comer con sus amigas.
- R. Hizo su merced muy discretamente, en pagarle a v. m. en la misma moneda.
- M. Todos éstos Señores conbidados están aquí, y la comida, a punto, quando vuéllas mercedes fuéren servidos, se podrán asentár.
- G. Señor Don Lorenzo, v. m. tiene las mañas del Réy que adónde no está no le hallan.
- L. Y v. m. quiere parecerse a Alcina, de quien dize Orlando, que por engaño, tray los Hómbres a gozar de sus regalos.
- G. Pero, no serán vuéllas mercedes convertidos en animales, como élla hazía.
- L. No me allegúro, que dexé de bolvérselo alguno en zorra.
- R. De buen vino quien quiera se caga una en el año.
- G. Cada uno su alma en su palma, qual el tiempo tal sea el tiempo. Éa Señores tomen sillas v. s. mercedes y siéntense.
- L. Déxenos v. m. ante todas cosas contemplar un rato la curiosidad de la mesa.

The Third Dialogue, of an Entertainment, between Five Gentlemen Friends, call'd Guzman, Roderick, Don Lorenzo, Mendoza, Osorio, a Gentleman Sewer, and a Page, which treats of all things belonging to a Feast, with other Discourse and witty Expressions.

- G. **W**HO is there, is ever a Page there?
- P. Sir.
- G. Do you know where D. Roderick lives?
- P. Yes, Sir.
- G. Then go thither and tell him I kiss his Hands, and desire to know whether he thinks it time we should see one another.
- P. Here is a Servant of Don Lorenzo.
- G. Let him come in.
- S. Don Lorenzo my Master kisses your Hands, Sir, and sends me to know whether you are at home, for he has some Business to communicate to you.
- G. Tell him I kiss his Hands, and would have gone my self to wait on him, but that I have some Affairs which oblige me to stay at home, and which concern him, and therefore if he pleases to come, he shall be welcome, and we will discourse of all our Business.
- S. Sir, I kiss your Hands?
- G. God be with you. Who is there? Bid the Gentleman Sewer see the Tables cover'd, for the Guests will be coming.
- V. Sir, how will you be serv'd to Day, after the Italian, after the French, after the English, after the Flemish, or after the German Fashion?
- G. Let me have a mean, out of all those Extremes, for I will not have so much Ceremony as the Italian, nor so much Curiosity as the French, nor such Abundance as the English, nor so long a Meal as the Flemmings, nor so Wet as the German, but of all these Extremes, make me a Mean after the Spanish Fashion.
- V. It shall be as Your Worship orders.
- G. Let it be your chiefest Care that the Meat be hot and the Drink be cold.
- V. What Wines will Your Worship have?
- G. Of all sorts, White, Red, Pale, Claret, Candia (a) Ribadavia, (b) S. Martin, (c) Toro and Cider, that there may be of all sorts.
- P. Here comes Don Roderick.
- G. Oh, Sir, you are as welcome as the good Year.
- R. Sir, I kiss your Hands.
- G. How do you Sir, you seem to go lame.
- R. I hit my self a Blow on the shin, as I alighted from my Horse.
- G. In ill time, let us see whether the Hurt be considerable.
- R. No Sir, it is (as they say) like the Pain of a Blow on the Elbow, or the Grief for the Loss of a Husband, it smarts much, and is soon over.
- G. Best of all.
- R. How does my Lady Mary, and all your Family.
- G. At your Service, but she told me that to prevent envying my Happiness, since I feasted with my Friends, she would go feast with hers.
- R. She did very discreetly to pay you in your own Coin.
- V. All the Gentlemen that are invited are here, and Dinner is ready, when Your Worships please, you may sit down.
- G. Don Lorenzo you are like the King, who cannot be found where he is not.
- L. And you will be like Alcina of whom Orlando says, that she us'd Arts to draw in Men to enjoy her Charms.
- G. But you shall not be turn'd into Beasts, as she us'd to do.
- L. I am not very sure, but that some one of us may be converted into a Fox.
- R. Any Man catches a Fox once a Year with good Wine.
- G. Every Man is his own Master, and does as Occasion offers. Come Gentlemen take your Chairs and sit down.
- L. First give us Leave a while to admire the Curiosity of the Table.

R. No

(a) Ribadavia a Wine growing in Galicia about the Town call'd Ribadavia.

(b) Wine of S. Martin the most delicate Wine in Spain, growing about S. Martin a Town in the Kingdom of Toledo.

(c) Toro another Town famous for Rich Wine.

R. No tiene mas piezas un juego de maestro corál, que están hechas de las servilletas.
 O. Yo aquí veo una galera, que no le salta mas, que la chúlma y Palaménta.
 M. Pues acá está un Caválo, que no se yó si el Caválo de Tróya era tan bien hécho.
 L. A mi me ha caído en suerte el Escúdo de Hércules.
 R. Y éite que ésta aquí, que es?
 M. A mi me parece, que es una Pirámide de las de Egipto.
 O. O es el Sepúlcro de Máuolo, o la Torre de Babel.
 G. Ahora déxen ésto vuestras mercedes y siéntense, si son servidos.
 R. No se puede dexar de mirár el Castílo de la Ensalada.
 L. Por mi vida, que no tiene mejor vista el de Milán.
 G. Si cada cosa se ha de mirár de por sí, yrenos ha el Día en Flóres. Cada uno tire su silla, que ésta no es méla de Cumpliniéntos.
 O. No los deve aver éntre Amigos.
 G. Yo soy Inimigísimo de Ceremonias.
 R. A mi no me parecen bien ningunas, sinó son las que háze la Iglesia.
 G. Olá, Plátos, tome v. m. ésse Señor Don Lorénço.
 L. Hága v. m. pára sí, que lo mismo hará cada uno.
 R. No se qual sea mejor úso, éste que usamos en España o el que se úsa en Inglaterra?
 G. Que es el úso de Inglaterra?
 R. Comer priméro lo cozido, que lo assado, nosotros hazémos al revés.
 L. Según réglas de Medicina, priméro se déven comer los manjares que son mas duros de Digestión.
 G. Y está ésto en razón pára que se venga a hazér la Digestión en un tiémpo.
 L. Pues que sea mas duro de Digestión, lo assado que lo cozido, es cosa clara.
 O. Yo cómo soy mas Goloso, hállo otra razón.
 L. Qual es?
 O. Que toda cosa assada, es mas sabrosa que la cozida, y así, yo lo querría al principio porqué sobre buen cimiento buen edificio se háze.
 M. (b) Pues yo aunque callo, piedras apáño.
 R. A mda v. m. discreto, que Obéja que bala bocádo pierde.
 G. Ami me parece que andan ya en seco éstos molinos.
 L. De la boca me lo quitó v. m.
 G. Pues si yo lo quité, justo es que yo lo póngá. Olá dádnos de bever, cada uno pida lo que mas guíto le diere, que de todo ay.
 R. Páge, yo soy muy devoto de aquél Santo que partió la capa con el pobre.
 P. A buen entendedor pocas palabras, de lo de Sant Martin quiere v. m.
 R. O cómo eres discreto, Dios me de siémpre contiéndá con quién me entiéndá.
 L. Pues yo un tiémpo fui torero, y me holgava siémpre con (d) Toros bravos.
 G. Señores yo brindo a quién tosiere.
 O. Valame Dios y que resfriados que estamos todos, no se tosse mas en un Sermón de quarésma.
 R. Éssa gracia, dicen que tenemos los Españoles, que somos como monas, Amigos de hazér lo que vemos hazér a otros.
 L. Así díze un refrán, si no hágo lo que veo, todo me méo.
 G. Cada uno asga de su perdiz, y la aderece como mejor le pareciere, ay están Limones, Limas, Naranjas, Pimienta, y todo lo demás.
 R. La perdiz, dicen los Médicos, que se a de comer éntre tres Compañeros pára que no haga mal.
 L. Tienen razón que han de sér el Hombre, un Gáto, y un Péro.
 O. Vuestras mercedes no han notádo la variedad de assados que aquí nos han traído.
 R. Que está debáxo de aquélla entramada?
 G. Una Cabeça de javalí.
 R. Entonces ráun os de Taverna son aquéllos.
 L. A'ntes al contrario que el rámo en la Taberna llama a los Borrachos al vino, y aquéllos llaman al mismo vino, así como la Piedra ymán al azéro.
 O. A Señor Mendóza, partid déssé Xigóte con vuestror Amigos.

R. A jester cannot show more Tricks than there is Variety in these (a) Napkins.
 O. Here I see a Gally, which wants nothing but the Slaves and Oars.
 M. And here is such a Horse that I question whether the Trojan Hoss were so well shap'd.
 L. Hercules's Shield, has fallen to my Lot.
 R. And what is this here?
 M. To me it looks like one of the Pyramides of Egypt.
 O. Either it is Mausolus's Tomb, or the Tower of Babel.
 G. Leave that, Gentlemen, and sit down if you please.
 R. A Man cannot chuse but look at the Sallet made like a Castle.
 L. As I hope to live the Castle of Milan looks no better.
 G. If we stand to gaze at every thing, we shall idle away our time. Every one draw his Chair, for this is no Table for Complements.
 O. Among Friends none ought to be us'd.
 G. I am the greatest Enemy in the World to Ceremonies.
 R. I like none but these the Church uses.
 G. Here, Plates, Take this D. Lorénço.
 L. Sir, serve your self, and every one will do the same.
 R. I know not which is the best Fashion, this we use in Spain, or that which is us'd in England.
 G. How is the English Fashion?
 R. To eat the Boil'd Meat before the Rest, we do quite contrary.
 L. According to the Rules of Physick, those Meats ought to be eaten First, which are hardest of Digestion.
 G. And that stands with Reason, that the Digestion may be made together.
 L. Then that Roastmeat is harder of Digestion than Boil'd is Demonstration.
 O. I who am more of an Epicure, have another Reason.
 L. What is it?
 O. That all Roast-Meat is more palatable than the Boil'd and therefore I would have it First, because a good Structure is rais'd on a good Foundation.
 M. Tho I say little, I think the more.
 R. You are in the Right, for the Sheep that bleats looses a Mouthful.
 G. Me thinks the Mill's grind dry.
 L. You took the Word out of my Mouth.
 G. If I took it out, it is but Reason I should restore it. Here give us to Drink, every one call for what he likes best, for here are all sorts.
 R. Page, I have great Devotion to that (c) Saint who gave part of his Cloak to a Poor Man.
 P. A Word to the Wise is enough, you would have that of Saint Martin.
 R. You are very cunning, may I always have to do with those that understand me.
 L. I once us'd to ride at Bulls, and always took Pleasure in fierce (d) Bulls.
 G. Gentlemen, I drink to him that shall Cough.
 O. God bless me, what Colds we have all got, there is no more Coughing at a Lenten Sermon.
 R. They say, we Spaniards have that Faculty, that we are like Apes, and love to do as we see others do.
 L. So says the Proverb, If I do not what I see done, I betray my self.
 G. Every one lay hold of his Partridge, and dress him as he likes best, there are Lemons and Oranges, Pepper, and every thing else.
 R. A Partridge, as Physicians say, is to be eaten between Three Companions, that it may not do harm.
 L. They are in the Right, that is, between a Man, a Cat and a Dog.
 O. You have not observ'd the Variety of Roast-Meats we have here before us.
 R. What is under those Green Boughs?
 G. A Wild Boars-Head.
 R. Then these are Tavern Bustles.
 L. Rather quite contrary, for the Tavern Bustle calls Drunkards to the Wine, and these boughs call upon the Flock it self, as the Loadstone draws the Steel.
 O. Master Mendóza deal about some of that mince'd Meat, among your Friends.

Ilh h h h

M. Señor

(a) Napkins make up in several Shapes, formerly us'd.
 (b) Verbatim. Tho' I say nothing, I gather Stones, like one who makes no Answer, but picks up Stones to throw at another.
 (c) Saint Martin gave a Piece of his Cloak to a Poor Man, and the Wine of St. Martin, is of the best in Spain.
 (d) He alludes to Wine of Toro, which is a Bull, as also a Town's Name.

M. Señor el mío murió súbito.

R. Parece que havéis respondido, un grán Adefésio.

O. Pues aunque lo parece, no lo es, que a su provecho ha hablado el Señor Mendoza.

R. Pues, si no nos lo declara, no saldremos de duda.

M. Señor, es el caso, que dos Compañeros llegaron a una Venta y como no uviéssse otra cosa que cenar, que una Gallina asada, el uno de ellos que tenía buena hambre, y era hombre astuto, dixo al otro Compañero, entantó que yo aparo ésta Gallina, contáme de que murió vuestro Padre. El otro se començo a enternecer, y con lágrimas le relató un proceso bien largo de la enfermedad de su Padre, y como avía muerto, en lo qual tardó tanto, que quando acordó ya el otro se avía comido, casi toda la Gallina. El hallándose burlado, quiso esquitarse y díxole, Compañero, pues yo os he contado la muerte de mi Padre, contáme vos, la del vuestro. El Compañero, por no perder la parte que le quedava y concluir presto razones, respondió, Señor, el mío murió súbito: Con la qual Repuélta el otro quedó muy burlado y el le ayudó a despachar lo que faltava.

R. Pues aquí no corre esse riesgo.

M. No, pero yo soy como el Cuculillo, que no canto bien hasta que tengo el Estómago lleno.

L. Con Licéncia del Señor Guzmán, quiero embiar ésta pella de manjar blanco a un Amigo.

G. Con mi Licéncia no yrá sola, si no la acompaña v. m. con aquel pávo, o éste Faísán, o el Francolin.

R. Por vida de Don Lorenzo es Amigo o Amiga?

L. Queréis que confiéssse sin tormento.

G. Y quando os le denantes Mártir que Confessor.

O. O que reveréncia que viene nuéstre Madre la Olla.

R. Y bien adornada de todas sus Pertenéncias.

M. Yo deséo saber, donde o porqué la llamaron Olla Podrida?

L. Metaforicaménte, porqué así como en un muladar se pú-dren muchas cosas diferentes, y de todas se haze la basura, así la olla que es compuesta de muchas cosas se viene a hazer un guizado o Potaje.

M. Tan buena Metáfora fué éssa como la del que llamó, Réy al que guarda los Puercos.

O. Por mi passa Tiempo yo me quiero poner acontar de quantas cosas está compuesta su merced de nuéstra Olla, Carnero, Vaca, Tercino.

D. L. Ellas son las tres Potencias de la olla como las del Alma, Memoria, Entendimiento, Voluntad.

O. Luego se sigue Repollo, Nавos, Cevollas, Ajos.

D. L. Ellas son las quatro Virtudes Cardinales.

O. Cabeças y piés de áves, Culantro Verde, Alcarabéa, Cominos, todas Espécias, las demas Yérbas yo no las conosco, otro las cuénte.

D. R. Lo que yo contaré después, será lo bien que me ha sabido.

D. L. Del Marqués Chapin Vitello Italiano, que fué uno de los mas Valientes Soldados que ha tenido aquella Nación, se cuenta que quando fué a España, le diéron tanto gústo éstas Ollas, que nunca quería comer en su Casa, sino que yéndo por la calle, si oía en Casa de algún Labrador rico, adónde se comía alguna olla destas, se entrava allá y se asentava a comer con él.

D. R. Devíalo de hazer por comer a costa agéna.

L. No, que antes que saliéssse mandava a su Mayordomo pagarse toda la costa de la Olla.

M. Páge, mira como pones esse Pláto no derribes el Salero.

L. Si, si, guarda, que es el aguero de los Mendózas.

R. Ya todos somos Mendózas en ésto.

L. Esse rastro nos quedó de la gentilidad.

M. Hemos visto esperiencias muy Verdaderas.

O. Créo en Dios y no en Pútas viejas.

M. Ellas son de las que yo me procuro siémpre guardar.

R. O Señor Guzmán, para que es ésto que se trae agora?

G. Dízen que para comer.

R. Si, pero éra menester hazer nnévos Estómagos, en que echall

O. Mandarlos hazer de barro a trueco de poco Dinéro.

M. Estas Tórtas reales, son como cuerpo que no ocupa lugar.

M. Sir, mine dy'd suddenly.

R. Methinks your Answer it nothing to the Purpose.

O. Yet tho' it sounds so, it is no such thing, for Mr. Mendóza has spoken for his own Interest.

R. However, if he does not explain it, we shall be never the wiser.

M. Then thus it is, Sir, Two Companions came to an Inn, and finding nothing for Supper but a Roasted Fowl, one of them, who was sharp set and cunning, said to his Companion, Whilst I dress this Fowl, do you tell me what Distemper your Father dy'd of. The other was mov'd and shedding some Tears, began to tell a long Story of his Fathers Sickness, and the manner of his Death, which took up so much time, that when he bethought himself the other had almost eaten up the Fowl. He perceiving he had been put upon, thought to be quit, and said to his Companion, since I have told you, how my Father Dy'd, do you tell me what end yours made. His Companion for fear of losing his Share of what remain'd, and to use few Words answer'd. Sir, my Father Dy'd suddenly. Which Answer disappointed the other, and he help'd him to make an end of what remain'd.

R. But here is no such Danger.

M. No, but I am like the Cuckow, and cannot sing well till my Belly is full.

L. With your Leave Master Guzman, I will send this Ball of (a) White Meat to a Friend.

G. With my Leave it shall not go alone, unless you send along with it that Turkey, or this Feasant, or this Godwit.

R. As you hope to live Don Lorenzo, is it a he Friend or she Friend?

L. Will you have me confess without the Rack?

G. Nay, tho' you be put upon it rather prove a Martyr than a Confessor.

O. How stately our old Motherly Dish the (b) O'lla looks.

R. And well adorn'd with all her Appurtenances.

M. I would be glad to know, how or for what Reason it was call'd, (c) O'lla Podrida?

L. Metaphorically, because as on a Dung-Hill many different things rot together, and all of them become one Heap of Dirt: Even so the Pot which is a Composition of many things becomes one Dish of Meat, or Soupe.

M. That Metaphor was as Good as his who call'd a Swine-herd a King.

O. To pass the time I will reckon up how many Ingredients go to the making up of our Worshipful O'lla or Pot. There is Mutton, Beef, Bacon.

L. Those are the Three Faculties of the Pot, like the Three Faculties of the Soul, the Will, Memory, and Understanding.

O. Next follow Cabbage, Turneps, Onions, Garlick.

L. These are the Four Cardinal Vertues.

O. The Heads and Feet of Fowl, green Coriander, Caraways, Cumin-seed, all sorts of Spice, as for other Herbs, I know them not, let another speak of them.

R. All I shall say of it, will be how well it has pleas'd me.

L. It is said, of the Marques Chapin Vitelli, who was one of the bravest Soldiers that Nation ever bred, that when he came into Spain, he was so taken with these Ollas, that he would never Dine at home, but that as he went along the Street, if he hapned to smell one of these Ollas in some Rich Farmers House, he would go in and sit down to Dinner with him.

R. Perhaps he did it to Dine Free-cost.

L. No, for before he went out of the House, he order'd his Steward to pay the whole Cost of the Olla.

M. Page, take heed how you set down that Dish, lest you overthrow the Salt.

L. Yes, yes, take heed, for it is the Superstition of the (d) Mendózas.

R. VVe are all Mendózas in that point.

L. That is one of the Remains of Paganism, which we still retain.

M. We have seen very evident Proofs of it.

O. I believe in God, and not in Old Whores Tales.

M. I always endeavour to keep clear of them.

R. O Master Guzman, what is all this for that is now brought.

G. They say, it is to be eaten.

R. Yes, but we want fresh Stomacks for it.

O. Get them tho' they be but of Earthen Ware for Cheapness.

M. These past past Tartes are like a Body that takes up no room.

L. Yo

(a) Made of the Brawn of Fowls dissolv'd with Milk, Sugar and Spice, and then made into Bals very delicious.

(b) Olla, or Olla Podrida, is all sorts of Fowl and Butchers-Meat stew'd together a very good Dish.

(c) A Rotten Pot, which consists of several sorts of Meat, close stew'd together.

(d) Spiking of Salt a general Superstition, and more particularly in that Family.

L. Yo tengo de probar ésta pepitoria.
 R. Yo con él Manjár real me acomodo.
 G. No ay quién prueve estos guisados, éstos torresnos lampreados, aquel adobado, el carnéro verde, las albóndigas, ni lo demás.
 T. Todo ésto es como Pedro por demás.
 O. O cómo allá voy no hago ménua.
 G. Alçalo pues Muchácho, desembarága y tráe aquella fruta de Sartén.
 P. Aquí ésta Señór, y la Melója y todo.
 R. Ésto allá a los Aguados, que la borrácha no quiere pálsa.
 G. Tráe pues la fruta de Póstre, Camueças, Péras, Azeitúnas, Nuézes, Avellánas, y la caja de Mermelada.
 L. Hásta cuándo hémos de comer?
 R. Hásta enfermár, cómo dize el refrán.
 L. Y después ayunár hásta sanár.
 O. Levánta ésta méfa Páge, que es yá gúla tanto comer.
 M. Yó he perdido la Gána, cómo si me la quitáran con la mano.
 L. El mejor Remedio, que halláron los Filósofos, contra la Hámbré, fué éste.
 R. Ésta Filosofía algo es gruésa de hiláça.
 O. Mejor se podrá dezír verdad apurada que yá sabéis lo que es.
 L. Ya se que verdádes apuradas son necesádes.
 O. Mas púlido lo queria yó dezír.
 R. Cómo?
 O. Indiscreción.
 D. L. Tanto monta cortár, cómo desatár, cómo dixo Alexandro.
 D. R. Olá Páge, tráe unos náipes entretengámos el tiempo.
 M. Ésto me conténta, véngan que desíço esquitárme de un escúdo que perdí estótro Día.
 D. L. No me péla a mi de que mi hijo juégue, sinó de que se quiere esquitár.
 M. El tahúr, chica ocasión ha menestér pára bolver al juégo.
 D. L. A mi me parece que sola una.
 M. Qual es?
 D. L. Tener Dinéros.
 M. Ni al tahúr faltó que jugár, ni al Golófo que comer, ni al endurador que endurár, ni al borrácho que bevér.
 D. R. Aquí están los Náipes, que jugarémos?
 D. L. Inguémos Ganapiérde.
 M. Es juégo de mucha fléna.
 D. L. Pues sea al Triúnfo.
 M. Quéde pára los viejos.
 D. L. A los çientos.
 M. Desvanéçefeme la Cabéça, de estár siémpre contándo.
 M. Pára que hémos de estár gastándo tiempo, sinó lo que se a de empenár, véndase, cómo dizen.
 D. R. Si, porqué haziénda hécha, no da priésa.
 D. L. Y mas quando le ganan al Hombre su Dinéro, le quitan présto de cuidá do.
 M. He aquí están los Náipes, juguémos.
 O. O'ra por quitár tódos de contiénda yó quiéro dar un Médio y sea éste, la primera.
 M. Muý bien avéis dicho, que es Médio éntre los estrénos.
 D. L. Yó entiéndo que se llamó Primera, porqué tiéne el priméro lugar éntre los juégos de Naypes.
 D. R. Alto, que ha de sér el tanto?
 M. Quatro reales y diés y seis de sáca.
 D. L. Pues baraja' los Náipes bién.
 O. Yó algo por mano, figura úvo de sér, no guerría yó yr hécho figura sin blanca.
 D. R. Yó un ás alçé.
 D. L. Yó un quatro.
 M. Yó un seis, con que soy máno.
 O. Véngan las Cártas que yó las dóy, una, dos, tres, quatro.
 Una, dos, tres, quatro.
 M. Pálsa.
 D. R. Pálsa.
 D. L. Pálsa.
 O. Eubido un tanto.
 M. No le quiéro.
 D. R. No le quiéro.
 D. L. Yó por ruérça avré de querér, echád Cártas.
 M. Echadme quátro Cártas, he aquí mi tanto.
 D. R. He aquí el mío, cada uno méta el suyo.
 M. Buélvo a pálsa.
 D. R. Yó también.

L. I will taste these GIBLETS.
 R. I will take up with this (a) Manjar Real.
 G. Will no Body taste of these other Dishes, these Bacon Collops with Hogs-Livers, that forc'd Pork, the Mutton with Parsley sauce, the forc'd Meat Balls, and the rest.
 L. All that is superfluous.
 O. Or (b) when I am there I am not missing.
 G. Take it away then Boy, rid the Table, and bring those Fricassers.
 P. Here they are, Sir, and the Methéglin with them.
 R. That is for those that drink Water, (c) for Drunkards do not care for Raisons.
 G. Then bring the Desert, Pippins, Pears, Olives, Filberts, small Nuts, and the Box of Marmalade.
 L. How long shall we eat?
 R. Till we are sick, as the Proverb says.
 L. And then fast till we are well.
 O. Take away this Table, Page, for it is more Gluttony to eat so much.
 M. I have lost my Stomach, as it had been taken from me.
 D. This was the best Remedy that ever Philosophers found against Hunger.
 R. That Philosophy is somewhat Course.
 O. It may more properly be call'd a downright Trust, and you know what that is.
 L. I know that downright Truths are fallies.
 O. I would give it a better Name.
 R. As how?
 O. Indiscretions.
 L. Cutting or untying all turn to the same Account, as Alexander said.
 R. Here Page, bring Cards, let us pass away the time.
 M. I like that, let them come, for I long to make even for a Crown I lost the other Day.
 L. (d) I am not concern'd because my Son plays, but because he will have his Revenge.
 M. A small Motive serves a Gamester to play again.
 L. In my Opinion he needs but one.
 M. What is it?
 L. If he has Money.
 M. Never Gamester wanted Money to play, nor a Glutton to eat, nor a Miser to hoard, nor a Drunkard to drink.
 R. Here are the Cards, what shall we play at?
 L. Let us play at Loadam.
 M. It is too tedious a Game.
 L. Then let it be at Trump.
 M. Leave that for Old Men.
 L. At Picket.
 M. It puzzles my Brain to be always reckoning.
 M. What should we lose time, but, as the saying is, (e) sell that outright, which must be pawn'd.
 R. Right, (e) for Business that is done requires no haste.
 L. And when a Mans Money is gone, his Care is at an end.
 M. Here are the Cards, let us play.
 O. Well, to end all Disputes, I'll find a Medium, (f) Primera.
 M. You are in the Right, for that is a mean between Extremes.
 L. I am of Opinion it was call'd Primera, because it has the First Place among Games at Cards.
 R. Go to then, how much a Counter.
 M. Four Royals and sixteen the Game.
 L. Then shuffle the Cards well.
 O. I lift for the deal, it must needs be a Coat-card, I would not be coated without a Cross in my Pocket.
 R. Have lifted an Ace.
 L. I a Four.
 M. I a Six, so that I am the Eldest Hand.
 O. Give me the Cards, for I deal, one, two, three, four, one, two, three, four.
 M. I Pass.
 R. I Pass.
 L. I Pass.
 O. I set a Counter.
 M. I will not stand it.
 R. I'll not stand it.
 L. I must see it, deal the Cards.
 M. Give me Four Cards, here is my Counter.
 R. Here is mine, let every one put in his.
 M. I pass again.
 R. And I.

H h h h h 2

D. L. 17

(a) Made of Almonds and sugar, Eggs, Breasts of Hens, Milk, Cynamon, and other Spices somewhat like Marmalade.
 (b) A Spanish Expression not to be made into English.
 (c) Because they are sweet and spoil Drinking.
 (d) A Spanish Proverb, to express that the Danger is not in Playing, but in seeking a Revenge after L. O. y.
 (e) Other Spanish Proverbs.
 (f) A Spanish Game.

D. L. Yo hago lo propio.
O. Yo enbido mi iésto.
M. Quierolo.
D. R. Yo también.
B. L. Pues yó no me puédo echar.
M. Yo híze una Primerilla.
M. Yó vóy a flux.
M. No querría yó que le hizíessedeys.
D. L. Es éssa buena Proximidad.
M. La Caridad bién ordenada comiënça de si mismo.
O. Yó he hécho cinquenta y çinco con que máto su primera.
D. I. Yó flux con que tiro.
D. R. No juégo mas a esté juégo.
M. Ni yó a otro ninguno, que vóy a un Negócio que me importa.
D. L. Páges tomád cáda quátro Reáles de Baráto.
P. Centuplum accipias.
P. En el çielo lo hálle v. m. colgado de un garaváto.

Diálogo Quárto, éntre dos Amígos

llamados el úno Móra, el ótro Aguilar, y un Mógo de Múlas y una Ventérra. Trátanse en el de las cosas tocantes al Camíno, con muy graciosos Dichos y Chistes.

M. **O** Lá Pédro havéis traído mi Múla?
P. Señor sí, aquí está la mohína.
M. Mohína es nunca buena.
P. Porqué, Señor?
M. Porqué ni Múla mohína, ni móça Marina, ni móço Pédro en casa, ni Abad por Vezino, ni póyo a la puerta, no es bueno.
P. Yó le prométo a v. m. que es mejor ésta, que la que arastró al cura quando dezía Dominus providebit.
M. Es vieja?
P. Nunca la vie nació, mas yó créo que mas vieja éra su madre.
M. Tira cózes?
P. Nunca una sola.
M. Siempre son a pares, camina bién?
P. Todo lo que anda se dexa atrás.
M. Tan buenas gracias tiene a fee que me va enamorando.
P. Una tiene sobre todas que es grande Astróloga.
M. Cómo así?
P. Conoce mejor que un reloj quando es medio Día, y juégo pide Cebada, y si no se la dan díze lúnes y no áy pasar de allí.
M. Buen remedio para ésto, rogárselo con la espuela.
P. Es flaquísima de Memoria.
M. Cómo?
P. Aunque le hincen un palmo de espuela, a dos pásses que da se le ha ya olvidado.
M. (c) Traélda, no se me da nada, que topádo ha Sancho con su Rocino, y si élla es traydora yó soy alebóso, y nos entenderemos a Cóplas.
P. En yéndo v. m. con cuydado hará de élla cera y Pavílo, que élla con quien se descuyda úsa sus tretas.
M. Echálde la Silla, apretálde bién la Cincha, Ponéldle Gurupéra, ataháre y Pretal, acortá éssos estribos que yó me averné con élla.
P. Quiero poner unas acciones nuevas por mas Seguridad.
M. Echálde el freno, ponéldle bién el bocádo y acortád la cabeçada, mirád si está bién herrada de todos quátro Piés.
P. En las manos, buenas herraduras y clavos tiene, de los Piés de fúyo gálle.
M. Echálde el Coxín y Portamanteo.
A. Ea Compañero, hémos ya de acabar de salir óy de aquí?
M. Ya vos venís Cavalgando?
A. Vostardais mas en componéros que una nobia.
M. Vuestra Múla es mansa?
A. Como una Boréga, no lo véis que fúbre Maléta.

D. L. I do so too.
O. I set my stake.
M. I'll see it.
R. And I too.
L. I cannot give it over.
M. I made a small Primera.
L. I am flush.
M. I would you were not.
L. Is that Neighbourly?
M. Charity begins at home.
O. I have Fifty Five, which wins your Primera.
L. I am flush and therefore I draw.
R. I'll play no more at this Game.
M. Nor I at any other, for I must go about some Business of Moment.
L. Pages take each of you Four Royals for the Cards.
P. May you receive it a Hundred fold.
P. God reward you, Sir, in Heaven.

The Fourth Dialogue, between Two

Friends, the one call'd Móra, the other Aguilar, and a Mulettier, and an Hostess. Which treats of things belonging to Travellers, with very pleasant Sayings and Jests.

M. **S**O ho, Peter have you brought my Mule?
P. Yes, Sir, here is the Mule with the black Muzzle:
M. A Mule with a black Muzzle is never good?
P. Why, Sir?
M. Because (a) neither a Mule with a Black Muzzle, nor a Maid that has pass'd the Sea, nor a Servant call'd Peter in ones House, nor a Neighbour Abbot, nor a Bench at the Door, is ever good.
P. I promise Your Worship, she is better then that which dragg'd (b) the Curate when he said, Dominus providebit.
M. Is she old?
P. I did not see her foal'd, but I believe her Dam was older.
M. Does she kick?
P. She never gives one alone.
M. They are always by Pairs, does she travel well?
P. All the ways she goes she leaves behind her.
M. By my troth, she has such rare Qualities, that I begin to be in Love with her.
P. She has one above all the rest, for she is a great Astrologer.
M. How so?
P. She knows better then a Clock when it is Noon, and presently she asks for Provender, and if they give her none, she sets up her Throat, and will not stir a Foot from the Place.
M. There is a good Remedy for that, which is to intreat her with the Spur.
P. She has a very short Memory.
M. How?
P. Tho' you strike the Spur a handful deep into her, as soon as she has gone Two Steps she forgets it.
M. Bring her, I care not, for Sancho has met with his Steed, and if she is a false Jade, I am as Knavish a Rider, and we shall understand one another to a Hair.
P. If you travel cautiously, you may make what you will of her, for she plays her Pranks with those that forget themselves.
M. Saddle her, pull her Girts tight, put on her Crupper and Breast-plate, shorten the Stirrups, and I'll deal with her.
P. I will put on new Stirrup Leathers for more Security.
M. Put on the Bridle, make the Bit fast, shorten the Head-stall, look if she be well shod of all Four Feet.
P. On the Forefeet she has good Shoes and Nails, on the Hinder-Feet she wears her own Hoof.
M. Put on the Pillion and the Portemanteau.
A. So Companion, shall we get away from hence to Day?
M. What are you come already, and a Horseback?
A. You are longer in sitting out than a Bride.
M. Is your Mule gentle?
A. As gentle as a Lamb, don't you see she endures a Maul.
M. De

(a) These things in Spanish Rome, and are Observations peculiar to Spain.

(b) A Curate falling off his Mule, and hanging in the Stirrup was dragg'd a long, till a Laborer in the Field took him out, and he took no care to help himself but only said Dominus providebit.

(c) A Proverb inferable to ours, Set a Thief to catch a Thief, or Diamant cut Diamant.

M. Del Agua Mánfa, me Libre Diós, que de la bráva yó me, guardaré.
A. A la vuéstra, bástale fer mohína.
M. Mal conocéys vos a quién núncia visteys, pués a fee que está graduáda por Salamanca.
A. En que Facultad?
M. En la de la Vellaquería, Bachilléra en ártes de tirár cózes Licenciáda en Léyes de véntas y de Mesónes, y Doctóra es en Astrología y Matemáticas.
A. Por ésto está siémpre mirándo al ciélo.
M. Es por contemplár los Aístros y Planétas y Sígnos y sus Cúrsos.
A. Vámos de aquí que tenemos lárga la Jornada.
M. Quántas léguas pensáys caminar óy?
A. Yo querría que cóze.
M. Pués a la Ma'no de Diós, Pédro ten éste Estribo.
A. Pédro os llamáys Compañéro?
P. A Servicio de v. m.
A. (a) Pués no le hága Diós mas mal a Pédro de el que se le alcánça.
P. No ay porqué Diós de salud a su Merçéd.
A. Sé que las púllas no se han de echár a los Amígos.
M. De Amígo a Amígo chínche en el ójo.
A. Yó no quéro píeito con vos Pédro, porqué mógo de Múlas un púnto fábe mas que el Diáblo.
M. Pués que pensáys vos que le fála a Pédro pára Diáblo?
P. No mas que un áño de aprendíz y un Garaváto.
A. Pára que el Garaváto?
P. Pára facár a Vuéstras Merçédes de la Caldéra, cuándo allá váyan.
M. Nosótro no hémos de yr al infierno.
P. No se yrán mas lleváros hán.
M. Arédro váyas málo, Maledicte Diábole.
A. Pédro Amígo, de que se háze la Púta vieja?
P. De la Púta móga.
M. No se háze sino de féldo y enéldo y del Cagaxón mordéldo y del pólvó de las éras.
A. De (c) cára me le véo y tiéne Alpargátes, y va a pié.
M. Pédro, míra que te díze, no respóndes?
P. No óygo, que sóy sórdo de úna Muéla.
M. Pués al Maéstro Cuchilláda?
P. No me lastima múcho ésta Herída, que es dáda uñas arriba, però guárdese del rebés que yó tiraré uñas abájo.
A. Pédro yó entiéndo que sóys vos aquél que llamávan de Urdemalas.
P. Pués todo el mundo ójo alérta, que algúna téngo de urdir en éste Camíno.
A. Pédro, allí viéne un caminánte, échale una púlla.
P. Olá Hermano por dónde van?
C. A do?
P. En casa de la Púta que os parió.
A. Buéna a fee, ótra al Compañéro que quéda atrás.
P. A Señor es súyo el Múlo?
C. Qual Múlo?
P. Aquél que beféis en el Cúlo.
A. Éste Cavalléro que viéne muy brávo no váya sin la súya.
P. A Señor v. m. a cáso va a Madrid.
C. Si voy, porqué lo dezís?
P. Pués Cagaxón pára quién va a Madrid?
M. Que boníto es Pédro si le laváse.
P. A'utes, después de lavádo no válgo náda.
A. Quánto aurémos andádo Pédro?
P. Núncia buélvo a mirár atrás, por no sér cómo la Mugér de Lot.
A. Quánto nos fála de aquí al primér Pueblo?
P. Légua y Miérda.
M. La légua andarémos nosótro, effótra vos la passaréis.
A. Pués porqué se pásse sin sentir, cuénta un cuénto Pédro.
P. De Dinéros pára mí le contara yó de buéna gana.

M. God defend me from still Water, for I'll keep my self from the Boisterous.
A. It is enough that yours has a Black Muzzle.
M. You hardly know those you never saw, but in Faith this Mule has taken her Degrees at Salamanca.
A. In what Faculty?
M. In the Faculty of Knavery, she is Bachelor of Arts at Kicking, Licentiate in the Laws of Inns, and Doctor in Astrology and Mathematicks.
A. That makes her always look up towards Heaven.
M. She does it to gaze on the Stars, Planets and Signs, and their Courses.
A. Let us go, for we have a long Journey.
M. How many Leagues do you think to travel to Day?
A. I would willingly go Twelve.
M. Then in the Name of God, Peter hold this Stirrup.
A. Is your Name Peter, Friend?
M. At your Service, Sir.
A. Then God do no more Harm to Peter, than that he knows how to do himself.
P. There is no Cause why God should bless your Health, Sir.
A. I know Men ought not to joke upon their Friends.
M. One Friend may play upon another.
A. I will not fall out with you Peter, for a Muletier is cunninger than the Devil.
M. Why what do you think, Peter wants to make him a Devil?
P. But a Years Apprentiship, and a Flesh-hook.
A. Why a Flesh-hook?
P. To pull Your VVorships out of the Kettle, when you go thither.
M. We are not to go to Hell.
P. You are not to go, but you will be carry'd.
M. Come behind me therefore Evil Spirit, Cursed Devil.
A. Friend Peter, what is an Old Whore made of?
P. Of a Young whore.
No (b) she is not, but of be se, and of Dill and of a Turd do you bite it, and of the Dust of the Traffing Floor, or of the same you are made of.
A. I see him just over against me, and he has Shoes of Packthred, and goes a Foot.
M. Peter, hark what he says to you, don't you Answer?
P. I cannot hear, for I am Deaf of one of my Teeth.
M. What has the Biter been bit?
P. I don't feel this Hurt much, for it was an oukward uphand Stroke, but beware of the downright Back-stroke, I shall return.
A. Peter I guess you are he that was call'd of (d) Urdemalas, or the Contriver of Mischiefs.
P. Then every one look to himself, for I shall contrive some this Journey.
A. Peter, there comes a Traveller, banter him.
P. Hey Brother, which way go you?
T. Whither?
P. To the Whore that bore you.
A. Good, now for his Companion, that is behind.
P. Sir, is the Mule yours?
T. What Mule?
P. That whose Arse you may kiss.
A. Let not this Gentleman, who looks so great go scotfree.
P. Sir, are you going to Madrid?
T. Yes, I am, why do you ask?
P. Then a Turd for him that goes to Madrid.
M. What a pretty Fellow Peter is, if he were wash'd clean.
P. Nay, if I were wash'd clean, I were good for nothing.
A. How far have we travell'd Peter?
P. I never look back, because I would not be like Lots Wife.
A. How far have we from hence to the next Town?
P. (e) A League and a Turd.
M. We will ride the League, and you shall swallow the other.
A. Then to divert it, tell us a Tale, Peter.
P. (f) I would rather tell Money for my self.

.1. No.

(a) Railery us'd by Travellers in Spain.
(b) These are all double Entenders and lose their Grace in English.
(c) Alluding to the Muletier, who runs a Foot.
(d) Urdemalas, is the Name of a Town, and signifies the Contriver of Mischiefs, and taken here by Allusion in this Sense.
(e) A nasty wilful Mistake of Miérda for Média, half a League.
(f) Still playing upon VVords, for Cuénto, is a Tale, or Story, and Cuénto in reckning, signifies a Million, so that it signifies, I would rather tell a Million of Money of my own.

A. No, sino algún acaecido que te avino por éstos caminos.

P. Entonces contáales hé uno que me sucedió el viaje passádo, haziendo éste Camino con unhidálgo.

M. No sea muy largo que me dormiré.

P. Si se durmiere la mohína tendrá cuydado de despertarle.

M. Vos se havéis levantádome mil falsos Testimonios, mirad quan bien camina y quan mansa va?

P. (a) Al freir lo verá.

A. Fa, dexémos ésto, váya el cuénto.

P. Losos días ha, yo vine éste camino con uno de los mayores habladores que he conoçido en mi vida y cómo el hablar mucho, y el mentir son tan parientes, dezía las mas terribles mentiras, que se pueden imaginár. Pues cómo el me preguntasse un día que me parecía de su buena Conversación, yo le respondí que muy bien, pero que quando contasse algún cuénto, no se alargasse y pasasse tanto, que dáva que murmurar a quantos le oyan. El me dixo pues sea ésta la manera, quando lleguemos a las posadas, siéntate tu apár de mi, y si me viéres contar algo que te parezca que voy fuera de camino, tírame de la hálida, entonces yo entenderé, y me deteneré. Con éste conçierto llegamos aquélla nóche a una vénta, donde acísso avían llegado también muchos Cavalléros, y cómo se asentassen a cenar y mi amo éntre ellos, yo me púse a su lado conforme al conçierto, y cómo es costumbre cada uno començó a contar las maravillas que avía visto por el Múndo. Llegó la vez al bueno de mi amo, el qual dixo que avía estado en tierra de Japon, y que éntre otras cosas Maravillosas que allí avía visto fué una Iglesia que tenía mil piés de largo. A éste tiempo yo que le vide yr tan desmandado y cómo estava alérta, tírole rézio de la hálida. El luego me entendió, y dixo; y uno en ancho los Cavalléros se començaron a mirar unos a otros y a sonreírse hásta que uno d'ellos dixo, Valame Dios Señor, y pára que servia ésta Iglesia tan larga y angosta, de mil piés de largo y uno en ancho. El replicó, Agradézcan vuestras mercedes que me tiraron de la fálida a tiempo, que sino, yo les voto a Dios que yo la quadrara. Fué entonces tanta la risa de todos que a mi amo le convino aquélla nóche salirse de la vénta, porque éntre todos quedó por refrán quando alguno contava algo que parecia mentira, Le dezía el terçero, quadrála v. m. que háto larga está.

M. De una cosa me espanto yo *Pedro*.

P. Qual es?

M. Cómo pudiste durar tan largo tiempo con tu competidor en la Facultad.

A. Si, porque éste es tu enemigo el que es de tu Oficio.

P. Es verdad que muchas vézes le quise dexar por ésto, y se lo dezía que no quería mas caminar con el, porque éra tocado de mi propia enfermedad y no me dexáva hazer bása.

A. Y que respondió a ésto?

P. Luego me prometía con juramento, que callaría toda una jornada pára que yo hablasse.

A. Y cumplíalo?

P. Tan imposible le éra a el poderlo cumplir cómo a v. m. digirir éste pelo de áfno, que ha comido.

M. Compañero pagado os han vueítro trabajo.

A. No tenéis razón *Pedro*, así yo os véa zarco a poder de nubes.

P. Antes ciegue, que mal véa.

A. Así yo os véa con mitra de siete palmos.

P. Así yo le véa a el, (c) Pápahigos de su Mula.

A. Echote una púlla con su pulloncillo, que tu Mugér te haga çérvo y te llamen todos cuchillo.

P. (j) Echote una púlla venida sobre mar, que los dientes se te caygan y no puedas mear.

M. Piquémos Compañero que se va haziendo tarde.

A. Que Hora sera *Pedro*?

P. La de ayer a éstas Horas puntualmente.

A. Fuió también lo dixera mi Mula, si supiera hablar.

P. Soy yo Relóx, que me pregunta que Hora es?

A. A lo ménos (d) badájo, que monta tanto.

A. No, but tell us, something that has happen'd to you on the Road.

P. Then I'll tell you a thing that happen'd to me the last Journey, I travell'd this way with a Gentleman.

M. Let it not be too long, for I shall fall asleep.

P. If you fall asleep, the Mule with the Black Muzzle will take care to wake you.

M. You have told a Thousand Lyes of her, see how well she goes, and how quiet she is.

P. (a) You will see that when you come to fry.

A. VVell let us leave this, forward with the Tale.

P. Not long since, I travell'd this way with one of the greatest Talkers that ever I knew in my Life, and much Talking and Lying being near of kin, he told the most Horrible Lies that can be imagin'd. He hapning one Day to ask me how I lik'd his Discourse, I answer'd, very well, but that I would advise him, when he told any Tale not to stretch so much, because it gave all that hear'd him Occasion to rail at him behind his back. If so, said he, let us manage it thus, VVhen we come to an Inn, do you sit down by me, and if you hear me tell any Story that you think extravagant pull me by the Skirt, and I shall understand you, and check my self. Being thus agreed we came that Night to an Inn, where there were several Gentlemen, and when they sat down to Supper, and my Master among them, I took my Place by his side, as had been agreed, and as the Custom is every one began to tell what strange things he had seen in his Travels. My good Master's Turn being come, he said, He had been in Japan, where among other VVonders he saw a Church a Thousand Foot in Length. Now I perceiving he had lash'd out, and being upon the VVatch pull'd him hard by the Skirt. He presently understood me, and said, and one Foot in Breadth. The Gentlemen began to look at one another, and to smile, till one of them said. In the Name of God, Sir, what use did they put that Church to, which was so long and narrow, a Thousand Foot in Length, and but one in Breadth? He replied, Thank him, that pull'd me by the Skirt in time, for if he had not, I vow to God, I had made it Square. This put them into such a Fit of Laughing, that my Master was fain that Night to get him out of the Inn, for it became a By-word among them, when one told any thing that look'd like a Lie, the Third Man said to him, Make it Square, for it is long enough.

M. I wonder at one thing Peter:

P. VVhat is it?

M. How you could hold out so long with a Competitor in your own Faculty?

A. Right, for Two of a Trade can never agree.

P. I must own I was several times about leaving him for that Reason, and told him, I would not travel any more with him, because he was troubled with my Distemper, and would not let me win a (b) Trick.

A. And what Answer did he make you?

P. He presently swore to, he would be silent for a whole Days Journey, that I might talk.

A. And was he as good as his Word?

P. It was as impossible for him to perform it, as for your VVorship to digest the (c) Asses Hair you have eaten.

M. You are well paid for your Pains, Comrade.

A. You are in the wrong Peter, as I hope to see your Eyes blew again with Pearls.

P. I wish you may be blind rather than weak-sighted.

A. May I live to see you wear a Miter seven Hands high (h).

P. May I see you kiss your Mule under the Tail.

A. One flirt at you with a young one at its Tail, may your Wife make you a Stag, and every Body call you Cuckow.

P. One Flirt for you, which came from beyond Sea, may your Teeth drop out, and may you not be able to piss.

M. Let us spur on Companion, for it grows late.

A. What a Clock may it be, Peter?

P. Just the same it was yesterday at this time.

A. My Mule might have said as much, if she could speak?

P. Am I a Clock that you ask me what time a Day it is.

A. At least you are a Clapper, which amounts to the same.

P. Y

(a) A Collier Sold Coals to a VVoman, and putting down his Coals, put up her Frying Pan, the VVoman asking if they were good Coals, he answer'd, Alfresr lo verá, that is, She would see when she came to try any thing.

(b) As at Cards.

(c) Calling him Ass by Craft, meaning he had swallow'd a great deal of Nonsense.

(d) This is properly call'd Coróça, being made of Palsbord like a Miter, and Painted VVorm by Offenders carry'd on an Ass about the Streets, like our Carting.

(e) This is Spanish Rebaldry like what we use upon the VVater.

(f) Badájo, a Clapper of a Bell, Metaphorically a Blockhead.

(g) Pápahigo, is properly a sort of Cloak with a Hood for Rainy VVeather, and this alludes to the Miter, but Papá is no account or catch in the Mouth and Higos, here are the Hemorrhoids, so that it signifies to clap his Mouth to his stiles punishment.

P. Y si dýy adónde dare?
A. En la cabeça del púto de tu Padre.
P. Mas cerca ésta la fúya y sonará bién, pues ésta hueca.
M. Bién camína de andadúra vuestra Múla.
A. Y la vuestra ha bién deportante.
M. Sinó la convirtiése algunas vézes en tróte, que paréce al de la Madre.
A. Entrémos en ésta vénta a dár ceváda, y comér un bocádo.
P. Un bocádo no mas, mas piénso yó comér de un ciénto.
M. No os labréis passár un día sin comér *Pédro*?
P. Par diós nueétro amo, cómo díze el Bizcaíno, tripas llévan a piés que no piés a tripas.
A. Yo también dígo que pan y víno ánden Camíno que no mógo garrído.
P. Paz sea en ésta casa, quién está acá Huéspedá?
V. Quién está allá, quién llama?
P. A'y Posáda Señóra?
V. Si Señor, éntren y sean muy bién venídos, que tódo recádo ay.
P. Que aurá que comér?
V. A'y Conéjor, ay Perdíces, ay Póllor, ay Gallinas, ay Gán-
cos, ay Anades, ay Carnéro, ay Vaca, ay Cabrito, ay Me-
núdo de Puérco.
P. Bién díxe yó, que en su casa de v. m. no podía faltár (c)
Puérco.
V. Ni en la fúya faltará Velláco, miéntras el estuviére déntro.
P. No en verdád, Señóra, finó que me dixéron que los Días
passádos avía v. m. reñido bravamente con la limpiega.
V. También me dixéron a mi, que avía el deterrado la Ver-
guénça de su casa.
M. Huélgome *Pédro* que as topádo con lo que avías menester.
P. Y aún élla me ha menestér a mi.
V. Yó por ciérto, finó es para ponérle en (d) Peralvillo con
dóze y la Maéstra, no se para que?
P. Aóra Señóra no nos digamos mas, calláte, y callémos que
fendas nos tenémos.
V. E'a acábe habládor de Ventája, pída lo que ha menestér.
P. Déme héno, y Pája, y Cebáda, para las Múlas.
V. Quanto quíere?
P. Dos Harnéros de Héno y un Zelemín de Cebáda.
V. Muy póco es para tres Béstias.
P. Aquí no ay mas que dos, qual es la ótra?
V. La ótra sóys vos y mas Tragóna que effótras dos.
P. Si sóy, mas no de Páxa ni Cebáda, porque es muy dura de
Digestión.
V. Mas duro es un Garróte y suéle ablandár las Costillas a un
Velláco.
M. Bién está, no páse mas adelante Señóra Huéspedá, quanto
ponen de aquí a la ciudad?
V. Señor cinco Léguas.
M. Podrémos las caminar de aquí a la Nóche?
V. Cómo picáren?
M. A'y algún río en el Camíno, o algún mal pássio?
V. Por do quíera, ay una légua de mal Camíno.
M. Ay adónde herrár?
V. El camíno no, las Múlas si Señor, mil pártes ay dónde pue-
den herrár.
A. Señóra huéspedá cúa es ésta vénta?
V. De un Cavalléro de la ciudad.
A. Quantopágan por élla de arrendamiénto en un Año?
V. Mas que élla vále, quiniéntos Ducados.
M. De ésta fuérte, buena máña se an menestér dar a hurtár pá-
ra sacár la cólta.
P. E'íla no fálda, el Gáto por Liébre, la carne de Múla por vá-
ca, el víno passádo por A'gua, tódo va délta manera.
V. Mála pásqua de Díos al Velláco y mal San *Juán*, cuándo ha
vísto el ésto en mi Vénta?
P. Vístolo no, gustádolo si.
V. Vos mentís como Velláco, que nunca tal.

P. If I strike where shall I hit?
A. On the Scoundrel your Fathers Head.
P. Your Head is nearer, and it will sound well, because it
is hollow.
M. Your Mule paces well.
A. And yours ambles well.
M. If she did not change it sometimes into a Trot, which is
like the Dam.
A. Let us put into this Inn, to bait our Mules and eat a
Bit.
P. But one Bit. I design to eat above an Hundred.
M. Can't you live a Day without eating Peter?
P. By the Lord, Master, as the (a) Biskainer says, the
Belly carries the Feet, and not the Feet the Belly.
A. And I say, (b) that Bread and Wine go through with
the Journey, and not the lusty young Fellow.
P. Peace be in this House, who is here Landlady?
H. Who is there, who calls?
P. Have you any Lodging, Mistriss?
H. Yes, Sir, come in, and welcome, for here is good Enter-
tainment.
P. What is there to eat?
H. There are Rabbits, there are Partridges, there are
Chickens, Pullets, Geese, Ducks, there is Mutton, there is
Beef, Kid, and Hogs-Harshet.
P. I was in the Right when I said, there could be not
want of Swine in your House, Mistriss.
H. Nor will there be any want of a Knave in your House,
when you are at home.
P. Truly, Mistriss, but I was told you had a great falling
out with Cleanliness a while ago.
H. And I was told that you had banish'd Shame out of your
House.
M. I am glad Peter that you have met with your Match.
A. And she needs me to match her.
H. Who I, what to do, unless it be to tie you to a Stake
to be shot to Death, like a Rogue.
P. Well, Mistriss, let us say no more, hold your Peace, and
let us be husb'd, for we have both enough.
H. Well then, give over Prate apace, and ask for what you
want.
P. Give me Hay and Straw, and Barley for the Mules.
H. How much will you have?
P. Two Sieves full of Hay, and a Peck of Barley.
H. That is very little for Three Beasts.
P. Here are but Two, which is the other?
H. You are the other, and a greater Devourer than those
Two.
P. I am so, but not of Straw or Barley, for it is very hard
of Digestion.
H. A Cudgel is harder, and yet it uses to soften a Knaves
Ribs.
M. Enough, pray have done, Landlady, how far do they
reckon it from hence to the City?
H. Five Leagues, Sir.
M. May we ride them betwixt this and Night?
H. According as you spur on.
M. Is there any River in the way or any bad Passage?
H. Which way soever you go, there is a League of bad
Way.
M. (e) Is there any Place to shoe a Horse?
H. You can't miss the way, but there are many Places where
you may shoe your Horses.
A. Landlady, whose is this Inn?
H. A Gentleman's in the City.
A. How much Rent do you pay a Year?
H. More than it is worth, Five Hundred Ducats.
M. If so you had need be dexterous at Cheating to quit
Cost.
P. There is no want of that, they sell a Cat for a Hare,
Mules Flesh for Beef, Wine pouch'd in Water, and so all
other things.
H. God grant the Knave an ill Easter, and an ill Mid-
Summer, when did you see that in my Inn?
P. I never saw, but I have tasted it.
H. You lie like a Rogue, there was never any such thing.

P. Aóza

(a) A Biskainer travelling a Foot, and being faint for want of Food, went into an Inn, and fill'd his Belly, after which
he went on courageously, and therefore said, the Belly carries the Feet, and not the Feet the Belly.
(b) Youth and Strength will not carry a Man through without Eating and Drinking.
(c) Puérco, Is either a Swine, or Nastiness to which he alludes.
(d) Peralvillo, Is the Place where Highway-Men use to be shot to Death with Arrows, which are commonly Twelve in
Number, and la Maéstra, is that which goes through the Heart.
(e) Herrár, Is to shoe, and Errár to err, both pronounc'd alike, and therefore they play upon the words.

P. Ahora estémonos a cuenta huésped, no demos de comer al Diablo, venga acá, no se acuerda el otro Día, quando yó vine por aquí con un Cavallero que le pidió le diéle un pedáço de carne de aquello que le avia dado otro Día ántes quando avia pasado por aquí, porque dezía que le avia savido muy bién, lo qual oyendo aquel niño chiquito, dixo caro nos costarla, si cada Día se nos avia de morir un Rocín.

V. Es Verdad que aquello fué aquel Rocín que se nos murió, pero estava tan gordo y tan lindo que éra mejor que carne de vaca.

M. Señora huésped, aunque mas lindo sea, no nos de del agora.

V. No Señor que yá se acabó, hásta ahora avia de durar?

M. Veámos el vino que tales.

V. El vino es tal, que bálta a llevar al Cielo al que acostumbra a beverlo.

P. Oia nuestra áma, no bálta ventera sinó hereje?

V. Lo que yó digo es verdad y lo provaré, que el buén vino, lléva los Hómbres al Cielo.

M. De que manera?

V. El buén vino cria buena sangre, la buena sangre engendra buena Condición, la buena Condición para buenas obras, las buenas obras, llévan a los Hómbres al Cielo.

M. Ella ha provado su Intencion bastantemente.

A. Pero no se podrá dezir esto por éste vino.

V. Porqué.

A. Porqué esto mas parece Vinagre y Agua.

V. Agua! No por vida de mi Anima, que no tiene mas de la que le echó el de lo alto.

M. Pues Dios no le vino a echar Agua, que sin Agua lo crió.

P. Bien ésta v. m. en el cuento; el de lo alto es su marido, que está en lo alto de la Casa, y desde allí, écha Agua en el Vino, por una cebratana.

A. Con vos me entiérren Pedro, que sabéys de cuenta.

M. Yó entendía que llamava a Dios, el de lo alto.

A. En todas las cosas se engaña.

P. Sinó es en la ropa vieja.

V. Por cierto que tienen razón, que está yá el Mundo muy perdido, por esto nos hemos recogido mi marido y yó a ésta venta, por acabar en buena vida.

M. E'itallamays buena vida huésped?

P. Si Señor, que peor éra la de los de Sodoma y Gomorra.

V. No le parece a v. m. que es buena vida, estar hechos Hermitanos en éste desierto? Que mas hicieron los Padres del Yermo?

P. Y tan virtuosos, que de la Oña, a quantos pasan les quitán lo que llévan.

V. Quant, nunca Dios tal quiera, recebir lo que nos dan con cortesía, esto si.

P. Es el caso, que llaman cortesía a la gançua, con que abren las vicéas.

V. El Diablo truxo a éste moço a mi Casa, véte con todos los Diablos, Espiritu de Contradición.

P. Mal me quieren mis comadres, porqué les digo las verdades.

M. Ahora Pedro, hazé cuenta con la huésped, y vámos de aquí, que es tarde.

P. Que le deve de todo huésped?

V. Espérese, contaré, dos de Paja, y de Paja dos, tres de cebada, cinco de Vino, uno de carne y dos de toçino, véynte Reales en todo.

P. Cuenta hécha, Mula muerta, escudero yos a pie. Pues a mi me quiere dar papilla Señora huésped, no sabe, que quando élla nació, ya yó comía pan con cortéça: Espere haré yó la mía.

V. Hazé, veámos.

P. Tres y dos son cinco, dos de blanco, y tres de tinto, y otros tres de estópas y péz, uno de la olla y dos de la Chólla, y Medio de la Cebolla, ocho son en todos.

V. Malos años para vos, pagádmé aquí, sinó, por el Siglo de mi Padre que os arañe ésta cara.

P. Quitado se ha el Gato la ropa de la Hypocresía, Señora Hermitaña ténga Paciencia, y no tanta codicia.

P. Come, Landlady; let us discourse the Matter seriously let us not humour the Devil, by making a Noise, don't you remember the other Day, when I came this way with a Gentleman, who desir'd you to give him a Piece of Meat, of the same, you had given him the other Day before, when he pass'd this way, because he said he lik'd it very well, which that little Child hearing, said, It would cost us dear, if a Nag were to Die every Day.

H. It is true, It was then that Nag that Dy'd, but he was so Fat and so Fair, that he was better than Beef.

M. Good Landlady, tho' he be never so Fat, do not give us any of it now.

H. No, Sir, for it is all spent, do you think it could last till now?

M. Let us see what sort of Wine you have.

H. The Wine is so good that it will carry a Man to Heaven, that uses to Drink it.

P. How now, Mistress, is it not enough to be an Inn-Keeper, but you must be a Heretick too?

H. What I say is true, and I'll prove it, that good Wine carries Men to Heaven.

M. How so?

H. Good Wine breeds good Blood, good Blood makes good Conditions, good Conditions produce good Works, and good Works carry Men to Heaven.

M. She has made out her Design effectually.

A. But that cannot be said of this Wine.

H. Why?

A. Because this is more like Vissger and Water.

H. Water! No, by my Soul, it has no more in it, than he above put into it.

M. God never came to put Water into it, for he made it without Water.

P. Sir, I find you understand much of the matter. He above is her Husband, who is on the Top of the House, and from thence puts Water into the Wine, with a long Pipe or Trunk.

A. May I Live and Die with you Peter, for you understand Business.

M. I thought she had meant God by him above.

A. There is a Cheat in all things.

P. Unless it be in an Old Garment.

H. Indeed you are in the Right, for the World is very bad, and therefore my Husband and I have retir'd to this Inn that living well we may make a good end.

M. Do you call this a good Life, Landlady?

P. Yes, Sir, for that of Sodom and Gomorra was worse.

H. Dont you think it is a good Life to be like Anchorites in this Desert, what more did the Fathers in the Wilderness.

P. And so virtuous, that they rob all Passengers of what they have by way of Alms.

H. God forbid we should take any thing, we only courteously receive what is given us.

P. The Cafe is, that they call the Picklock, which opens the Bags, Courtesy.

M. The Devil brought this Fellow to my House, get thee hence in all the Devils Name, thou Spirit of Contradiction.

P. My Gossips cannot endure me, because I tell them the Truth.

M. Well, Peter, reckon with the Hostess, and let us begon, for it is late.

P. Hostess, what is owing in the whole?

H. Stay, and I'll reckon, Two for Straw, and for Straw Two Three for Barley, Five for Wine, one for Meat, and Two for Bacon, Twenty Royals in all.

P. When the Reckoning is made, and the Mule Dead, Serving-Man get you home a Foot. Why, good Mistress Hostess, will you feed me with Pap? Don't you know that when you were born I could eat Crust? Now stay and I'll reckon.

H. Do so, let us see.

P. (a) Three and Two make Five, Two of White, and Two of Red, and Three more for Tive and Pitch, one for the Pot, and Two for the Head, and half a one for the Onion, make Eight in all.

H. A Mischief on you, pay me, or by my Fathers Soul I'll scratch your Face for you.

P. The Cat has cast off the (b) Garment of Hypocrisy, Mistress Anchorite have Patience, and be not so covetous.

V. No

(a) This is all a Piece of Spanish Banter.

(b) The Cat fanning her self an Anchorite, put on an Hermits Weed, and many Beasts and Creatures came to her for Ghostly Counsel, at last came the Mice, whom when she spied, she flung off the Garment, and fell upon them.

V. No me enénte Mortuorios, sinó Págueme, si no las bárbas le sacaré una a una.
M. Dále, lo que Pidiere la huésped, *Pédro*, no riñas con ella.
P. En una Nao cargada de Pláta, no áy háрто pára contentarla.
V. No pido sinó lo jústo, págame *Hermáno* y déxate de Palábras.
P. Así dize la *Picaza*, tóme Señóra ve ay dóze Reáles, los séis son de buéno, y los séis de mal provécho le hágan.
V. Mas no, sinó los séis, son de bién venidos séan, y los séis de en óra mala váys.
P. Maldiciones de Pútas viejas, Oraciones son de salud.
M. Quédese con Diós Señóra huésped.
V. El váya con vuestras mercedes, aquí está ésta póbre posada para todas las vézes que viniéren éste camíno, les suplico se sirvan délla.
P. Sobre buen haz de pája tía.
V. No, sino por sus ojos bellidos lo harán.
P. Quéde con Diós tía, y el la hága buena *Hermítána*.
V. Andad con Diós hijo, y el os hága mejor de lo que sóys.

Diálogo Quinto entre dos Amigos In-

gléses y dos Españóles, que se Juntaron en la Lónja de Lón-dres, en el qual se tratan muchas cosas curiosas, y de gústo, son los *Ingléses Egídio y Guiliérmo*, los Españóles *Diego y Alonso*.

E. ¿QUE hazéis *Guiliérmo*?
G. Ya lo véis *Egídio*.
E. Como estáys tan ocioso?
G. *Quia nemo me conducit*.
E. Pues yo os combido a un ráto de buena Conversación.
G. Adónde?
E. Venidos conmigo, no yréis adónde yo os llevaré?
G. Si me lo dezís priméro, porqué yr hombre, sin saber adónde, sería neçedá.
E. Luego no hazéis confianza de mí?
G. Si hágo, mas no sabéis que no todos los humóres son únos, y que podrá ser, lo que a vos os da gústo, enfadarme a mí.
E. Si, pero yo conozco ya vuestro humor, y me acomodo con él.
G. Con todo ésto, dezidme adónde me lleváys.
E. Vámos a la lónja, adónde me están esperando dos Amigos Españóles, muy discretos, gustaréis de su buena Conversación.
G. Háblan Inglés?
E. Un poquito, pero pues vos entendéis bién el Español, y yo también no importa.
G. Huélgome de yr, aunque no sé, mas de por aprender algunas buenas frases Españólas.
E. Ellas sé yo que las tienen buenas, porqué son de Tolédo donde es el primor de la Lengua Española.
G. Son por ventúra aquéllos, que se andan allí passeando.
E. Los propios, vámos alla, Diós guarde a vuestras mercedes.
D. Y venga con vuestras mercedes.
E. Pásse adelante la Conversación de que se tratava ahora.
D. No parece sino que la entendistes, que respondistes a élla sin dáros el pié.
A. Tratávamos de las salutaciones, que se úsan en *Inglaterra* y de las que se úsan en *España*.
G. Quáles son mejores?
A. Cierito en ésto, adónde quiera, áy abusos, quando dize el Español Diós os guarde, en óra buena estáys, Diós os de salud, y el Inglés buenos días, buenas tardes y otras semejantes, yo apruévolas por buena Salutaciones.
G. Pues el mundo las repruéva, y tiene por tóscos a los que las úsan.
A. Y aún por ésto se dize, que anda el mundo al revéz, y no áy mejor señal de que ésto es buéno, de vér que el mundo lo repruéba.
G. De las demás Salutaciones que os parece?
A. De las demás digo, que quando el Inglés pregunta a otro, cómo estáys, dize una gran neçedad, y quando el Español dize bésos las manos, dize una gran mentira.
G. Menester es que déys razón, de vuestra nueva Opinión.
A. Ahora dezíme por vuestra vida, no os parece neçedad, al que vos véys buéno preguntarle cómo está?

H. Don't tell me a Tale of a Cock and a Bull, but pay me or I will pull off the Hairs of your Beard one by one.
M. Give the Hostess what she asks Peter do not quarrel with Her.
P. A Ship load of Silver will not content her.
H. I ask nothing but my Due, pay me Friend, and make no more Words.
P. (a) So says the Mag-Pie, here are Twelve Royal much good, may it do you with six of them, and the Devil, choke you with the other six.
H. Not so, but for Six of them you are kindly welcome and for the other Six the Devil go with you.
P. Old Whores Curses are as good as Prayers for ones Health.
M. God be with you Landlady.
H. God go with your Worships, this poor Inn, is at your Service, I desire you will make use of it, as often as you come this way.
P. (b) Upon a good Sheaf of Straw Aunt.
H. No, but for your sweet Looks, I'll warrant you.
P. God be with you Aunt, and may he make you a good Anchorite.
H. Farewel Son, and God make thee better than thou art.

The First Dialogue between Two En-

glish Friends, and Two Spaniards, who met upon the Exchange in London: Which treats of several curious and diverting Matters. The English-Men are Giles and William, the Spaniards James and Alonso.

G. What are you doing William?
W. You see what I do Giles.
G. Why are you so idle?
W. Because no Body has hir'd me.
G. Then I invite you to a little good Chat.
W. Whither?
G. Come along with me, wont you go where I shall carry you?
W. If you tell me first, for it were folly for a Man to go he knows not whither.
G. Then you dare not trust me?
W. Yes I dare, but don't you know, that all Humours do not agree, and it may so fall out that what pleases you may displease me.
G. Yes, but I know your Humour, and I sute my self to it.
W. However, tell me whither you are carrying me.
G. Let us go to the Exchange, where Two Spaniards my Friends and very discreet Men expect me, and you will be pleas'd with their Discourse.
W. Can they speak English?
G. A very little, but since you understand Spanish well, and I too, it is no matter.
W. I am willing to go, tho' it be but to learn some good Spanish Phrases.
G. Those I know they have, and good ones, because they are of Tolédo, where the Prime Spanish is spoken.
W. Are those they who are walking there?
G. The very same, let us go thither. God save you Gentlemen.
J. You are welcome Gentlemen.
G. Go on with the Discourse you were upon.
J. It looks as if you had heard it, for you Answer'd to it pat without giving you the Cue.
A. We were talking of the manner of Saluting us'd in England, and of that which is us'd in Spain.
W. Which is the best?
A. Indeed in this particular, there are Abuses on both sides, when the Spaniard says God keep you, a good Hour to you, God give you Health: And the Englishman good Mornen, or a good Evening, and the like, I look upon them as a good Salutations.
W. But the World condemns them, and looks upon those who use them as Clownish Persons.
A. And therefore we say, the World goes the wrong way, and there is no better Token of its being good, than the Worlds condemning of it.
W. What do you think of other Salutations.
A. Of the rest I say, that when the Englishman asks another, how do you do, he talks Nonence, and when the Spaniard says, I kiss your Hands, he tells a great Lie.
W. You must give a Reason of your new Opinion.
A. Tell me pray now, don't you think it a folly to ask him that you see in Health how he does?

iiiii

G. Tencys

(a) As believing but Six Royals her Due.
(b) Meaning their Money.

- G. Tenéys razón, pero podría tener algún mal secreto que no se éche de ver.
- A. Entónces que remediáis vos, con preguntárle cómo está. No sería mejor, rogar a Dios, que le de salud, cómo háze el otro.
- G. Ahora dezid lo del Español.
- A. El Español digo, que dizé mas mentiras éntre año en éste caso, que reales da por Dios. porqué dezir al que encuentra, beso las manos a v. m. si habla de presente, bien vénos, que niente, pues no se las besa, si de futuro tai bien, porqué bien sabemos, que quando el otro quisiéssé dárselas, por muy amigo que tuéssé, no se las querría el besar.
- G. Si però parece que es una manera de reconcimiento de superioridad al que se dize.
- A. Así es, però éssé reconcimiento no ésta mas que en la lengua porqué el refrán dize, manos besa hombre que querría ver cortadas.
- G. Y ós diré lo que sucedió al propósito, a un Cavallero viejo Español, con otro moço, y fué, que cómo el moço por buena criança, le dixo al viejo, suplico a v. m. me de las manos, que se las quiero besar, El viejo confiado en su anciania, las alargó para que se las besasse, el otro ya arrepentido se las asió con las suyas y con muy buen donaire le dixo, Señor yó y v. m. a otros dos.
- G. El moço anduvo discreto en hazerlo así, y el viejo nécio, porqué bien sabemos, que palabras de buena criança no obligan.
- D. Así es verdad, que éssa çeremonia de besar la mano, sólo la déve el vasallo al Señor.
- A. Éssa sola Salva guarda tiene nuestra costumbre, que con dezir, beso a v. m. las manos, parece que es dezir, reconosco a v. m. por mi Señor, y yó por vuestro vasallo.
- E. Y que os parece de ésta costumbre, que tenemos en Inglaterra de asirnos las manos unos a otros?
- A. Dos manos asidas, siémpre fué simbolo de amistad, però dar los tirones, que aquí se dan uno a otro, téngolo por poca gravedad, y no sé si diga por liviandad.
- E. Antes parece que aquéllo es por mas Confirmación de la amistad.
- A. Éssa Confirmación ha de sér con obras, y no con ademanes ni tirones, quanto mas que déve de avér muchos que con la mano asida y tirando, le déven de estár con el corazón matando.
- G. Que dezís de la otra de besar los hombres a las mugéres publicamente.
- A. Éssa costumbre tuvo su principio en Roma, en el tiempo que élla florecía, aunque se inventó a diferente propósito del que ahora se úsa.
- G. A que fin la inventaron?
- A. Los Romanos aborrecían tanto el Vño en las mugéres, que tenían ley, que condenáva a muerte a la que lo bevia, y porqué no lo pudiéssén haver escondidamente, tenían licénçia sus parientes de besarlas para que por el olfato conociéssén, si lo avían bevído.
- G. Si ahora se uviéssén de matar todas las que lo beven, yó veo que quedáramos sin mugéres.
- E. No créo, que fuéра muy gran pérdida, según nos son causa de males.
- G. Yó para mi téngo, que la mayor causa de la dissoluçion en algunas mugéres de Inglaterra es ésta costumbre de bejallas en público, porqué con ésto piérdén la vergüença y al tocamiento del beso, les éntra un venéno que las inficiona.
- A. Antes que se introduxiéssé ésta costumbre en Roma, cuenta Tito Livio, que desterraron délla a un Senador, persona de mucha cuenta, sólo porqué besó a su mugér delante de una hija suya.
- G. De un extremo vinieron a dar en otro extremo.
- E. En España no se úsa besar los hombres a las mugéres?
- D. Si besan los maridos a sus mugéres, y ésto allá detrás de siete paredes, dónde aún la luz no los pueda ver.
- G. Es porqué los Españóles son demasiadamente celófos.
- A. No, sino, porqué somos tan trabiéssos, que no hémos menestér éllé apétito, para hazér mil malos recados, que sería si tubiéssémos élla Ocasión.
- G. Yó créo, que antes causaríа hastío, y no andarían los hombres tan golófos, porqué vedamiento es causa del apétito.
- A. No es fuégo el de la concupiscénçia, que se ahóga por echárle mucha matéria, antes es cómo la hydropesia, que mientras mas el enfermo béve mas sed tiene.
- D. Especialmente éntre los Españóles, que por sér de Complexión coléricos, está Venus en su punto.
- G. Yó entiéndo ésto al contrario, porqué Venus consiéte mas en humedad que en calor, por lo qual entiéndo que mas aptos son para semejante exercicio los húmedos de Complexión, que los Coléricos que son de su naturaleza secos.
- G. You are in the right, but he may have some private ailing, which does not appear.
- A. Then what is he the better for your Asking him, how he does, were it no better to pray to God, to give him Health as the other does.
- W. Now tell that of the Spaniard.
- A. The Spaniard I say in this Case tells more Lies in a Year, than he gives Royals for Godsake, for to say to one, he meets, I kiss your Hands, Sir, if he means the time present, we plainly see, he lies for he does not kiss them: If of the time to come, the same, for we well know that if the other would give him his Hands to kiss, tho he were never so great a Friend, he would not kiss them.
- W. Yes, but it looks like a sort of Acknowledgment of Superiority to him, it is said so.
- A. It is so, but this Acknowledgment is only in the Tongue: for the Proverb says, a Man kisses those Hands, he would gladly see cut off.
- J. I'll tell you a Passage that happen'd to this purpose, to an Ancient Spanish Gentleman with a Young one: And it was, that the Young Man to show his Breeding said to the Old Man, I entreat you, Sir, give me your Hands that I may kiss them. The Old Man relying on his Age, held them out to him to kiss, the other repenting, took hold of them with his Hands, and very pleasantly said to him, Sir, you and I will answer any Two.
- W. The Young Man did very discreetly, the Old Man was a Fool, for we all know that Words of Compliment do not bind.
- J. That is true, for the Ceremony of kissing the Hand, is only due from the Vassal to his Lord.
- A. That is all that can be said for our Custom, for by Saying, Sir, I kiss your Hands, it seems to imply, Sir, I own you for my Lord, and my self for your Vassal.
- G. And what do you think of the Custom, we have in England of shaking Hands.
- A. Two Hands grasping one another, were always a Token of Friendship, but to shake them, as here they do one another, I look upon it as want of Gravity, and I know not whether I may not call it Lightness.
- G. That that rather seems to be a greater Confirmation of Friendship.
- A. That Confirmation ought to be in Actions, and not in Gestures, nor tugging, and the rather, because there are many who grasp and shake Hands, and in their Heart would kill one another.
- W. What say you of that other Custom, of Men kissing the Women publicly.
- A. That Custom first began in Rome, in its flourishing times, tho it was invented for a different purpose, than it is now us'd.
- W. For what purpose was it invented?
- A. The Romans were so averse to Womens drinking of Wine, that they had a Law which condemn'd any Woman to Death that drank it, and that they might not drink it in private, their kindred had Liberty to kiss them, that they might discover by the Smell, whether they had drank any.
- W. If all that drink it now were to be put to Death, I perceive we should have no Women left.
- G. I do not think it would be any great Loss, considering how much Mischief they are the Cause of.
- W. I am of Opinion that the kissing of Women in publick in England, is the greatest Cause of their Leanness, because by it they lose their Modesty, and with the Touch of the Kiss a Poison enters, which infects them.
- A. Before this Customs was brought up in Rome, Livy tells us that they bannish'd a Senator, a Person of great Note, only because he kiss'd his Wife before his own Daughter.
- W. They fell from one Extreme into another.
- G. Is it not the Fashion in Spain, for Men to kiss Women.
- J. Yes, the Husbands kiss their Wives, and that is so privately that the very Light may not see them.
- W. That is because the Spaniards are too jealous.
- A. No, but because we are so wanton, that we need not that Allurement to commit a Thousand Faults, then what would it be if we had that Incentive.
- G. I rather believe, it would give them a Loathing, and Men would not seek it so greedily, because the Prohibition inflames the Desire.
- A. The Fire of Concupiscence, is not of that Nature, as to be stifi'd by throwing on it of much matter, but rather like the Dropsy, that the more the Sick Person drinks, the more Thirsty he is.
- J. Especially among Spaniards, who being of a Choleric Constitution, Venus is in her full Force.
- G. I take that quite the contrary, because Venus consist rather in Moisture than in Heat, therefore I look upon those that are of a moist Constitution to be fitter for that Exercise than the Choleric, who are naturally dry.

A. Si però la hume lād sin calor, sería cómo la tierra sin el Sol, que no es suficiente de si misma a producir cosa alguna.

D. Por ésto, los Poetas, casaron a *Vénus* con *Vulcano* Dios del fuego.

E. Mas ni *Vulcano* ni *Vénus* sin *Céres* y *Baco* no valen un (a) Cáco

G. Pues yó pára mí téngo, que en las tierras mas frías, está mas reconcentrado el calor natural, y por ésto con mayor aptitud, en los que biven en las tales regiones.

A. No es éste calor reconcentrado, que ésta en el corazón, el que es causa deste fuego, sino el que está en la sangre y partes exteriores.

G. Si però no me negaréis, que el calor de la sangre no procede del, del hígado.

A. Así es verdad, però no obra éste efecto en su Origen y fuente, sino quando se ha derramado por las venas, y cómo la virtud esparzida, es mas flaca que quando está unida, si quando lo está es acometido el calor de su contrario el frío, y ésto con fuerza y vehemencia, vence y resfría de fuerte que no puede obrar ni hazer su efecto.

D. Así es, y la experiencia de ésto se vée en los Cabrones, que es animal luxuriousísimo, y en llevándole a tierras frías, o no puede bivar, o pierde mucho de su Potencia.

G. Los Fáunos o Semicápras, que los Antiguos llamávan Médicos dioses cuentan los Autores, y Poetas, que éran en extremo luxuriosos.

E. Es verdad, que úvo o áy tales hombres en el Mundo llamados Fáunos?

A. En la Vida de San *Pablo* primer Hermitaño se cuenta, que en aquél desierto donde el hazía su Penitencia, la hazía también Santo *António*, el qual cómo por Revelación supiése cómo estava allí cerca San *Pablo*, le fué a visitar y en el camino encontró con uno, el qual de la cinta pára arriba, tenía forma perfecta de hombre, salvo que la cabeza tenía llena de Cuernos pequeños, y de medio pára abajo éra Cabron con muy largas Vedijas, y piés de lo mismo.

E. Hablaba alguna cosa?

A. Si, que el Santo le habló, y le preguntó quién éra, y el en un Lenguaje muy bárbaro, però tal que el Santo le pudo entender, le respondió, que éra uno de los moradores de aquél desierto, a quien la Greca gentilidad adorava por dioses, però que éran Criaturas mortales, y dixo mas al Santo, que su grey y gente le embiava a el por embaxador a rogárle al Santo, que rogasse por todos, al común Dios de todas las gentes, que bien sabían que avía bajado del cielo y héchose hombre por redimir a los hombres, y con ésto se fué por aquél desierto, con tanta ligereza que en muy breve espacio, le perdió de vista el Santo.

D. Yó he leído también, que al Emperador *Constantino* Magno, le traxeron de sílos desiertos, otro vivo, y lo estuvo muchos Días, y después de muerto, salado, le traxeron por muchas partes del Mundo, pára que todos le viesén.

G. Bolviendo a nuestra primera Plática, que os parece de ésta ciudad de Londres?

A. A mí me parece, en verano tienda, y en invierno contienda.

G. Cómo se entiende ésto?

A. Digo que parece, en verano tienda, porque en aquél tiempo, todos los Señores, Cavalleros, y Hidálgos, se salen fuera de ella, y se van a sus aldeas a pasar el verano, quedando en ella solos los Oficiales con sus tiendas abiertas.

G. Y porqué lo demás?

A. En invierno son los términos, y cómo acuden de todo el Reyno a ella a sus pleitos, está hecha toda contienda o pleito, però últra desto es una de las mejores ciudades del Mundo a lo que yó entiendo.

G. Que dezís de toda la Tierra en general?

A. Que es fertilísima y abundante, de todas las cosas que ella produce, especial de ganados, que déven de ser los mas gruesos y mejores de el Mundo.

G. Y también de semillas es muy fértil.

A. Así es verdad, però cómo no puede aver cosa perfecta en éste Mundo, yá que en ésto es abundante, le faltan otras cosas necesarias, a la Vida Humana, que ella por la frialdad de su sitio, no puede producir, y así tiene necesidad, de comunicación con otros reynos.

A. Yes, but Moisture without Heat, would be like the Earth without the Sun, which is not sufficient of it self to produce any thing.

J. Therefore the Poets Marry'd Venus with Vulcan, the God of Fire.

G. But neither Venus nor Vulcan, without Ceres and Bacchus are worth a doit.

W. For my part I am of Opinion that in the Coldest Countries, the Natural Heat is more united in its Center, and therefore there is a greater Disposition in those that live in such Countries.

A. It is not that Heat, that is in the Heart, which is the Cause of this Fire, but that which is in the Blood and exterior Parts.

W. Yes, but you cannot deny, but that the Heat of the Blood proceeds from the Heat of the Liver.

A. That is true, but it does not produce this Effect in its Origin and Source, but when it has spread it self through all the Veins, and Virtue dispers'd being weaker than when united; if when it is so, the Heat is set upon by his opposite the Cold, and that with Force and Vehemency, it overcomes and cools so effectually, that it cannot produce its Effect.

J. It is so, and the Experience of it, is seen in He goats, which is a most luxurious Beast, and when carry'd into cold Countries, either it cannot live, or loses much of its Vigour.

W. The Faunes or half Goats, which the Ancients call'd Demi-Gods, Authors and Poets say, were wonderful Lecherous.

G. It is true, that there were or are any such Men in the World as they call'd Faunes?

A. In the Life of St. Paul the First Hermit, they write that in the same Desert where he did penance, St. Anthony did the same, who knowing by Revelation that St. Paul, was not far off, he went to visit him, and by the way met with one, who from the waste upwards had the perfect Shape of a Man, only that his Head was full of little Horns, and from the Middle downwards he was a He-Goat, with very long Hair, and Feet accordingly.

G. Could he speak?

A. Yes, for St. Anthony spoke to him, and ask'd him, who he was, and he in a very Barbarous Language yet such as the Holy Man could understand, answer'd him, That he was one of the Inhabitants of that Desert, whom the blind Gentiles worshipp'd as Gods, but that they were Mortal Creatures, and further told the Saint that his People and Nation sent him as their Ambassador, to desire the Holy Man, to pray for them all to the Common God of all Nations, for they knew very well, that he came down from Heaven, and was made Man to redeem Mankind. This said, he went away along the Desert so swiftly, that the Holy Man soon lost sight of him.

J. I have read too, that they brought the Emperor Constantine the Great, another alive out of those Deserts, and he liv'd, and afterwards being dead and salted, they carry'd him thorow many parts of the World, that all Men might see him.

W. To return to our First Discourse, what do you think of the City of London?

A. In Summer to me it looks like a Shop, and in Winter a Debate.

W. How is this to be understood?

A. I say it looks like a Shop in Summer, because at that time, all the Noble Men, Knights and Gentlemen, leave it, and go to their Country-Houses, to spend the Summer, and only the Tradesmen remain with their Shops open.

W. And why the rest?

A. The Terms are in Winter, and People resorting to it from all parts of the Kingdom to their Law-Sutes, it is nothing but Strife and Contention, but having this aside; it is one of the best Cities in the World, in my Opinion.

W. What say you of the whole Country in general?

A. That it is most fruitful, and abounding in all things; it produces, especially Cattle, which I look upon as the largest and best in the World.

W. It is also very fruitful in Grain.

A. It is very true, but as there cannot be any thing perfect in this World, so tho' it abounds in these things, yet it wants other things, necessary for Humane Life, which it cannot produce by reason of the Coldness of its Situation, and therefore stands in need of Trade with other Nations.

G. Que cosas son éstas, que dezís que le faltan, que yo creo que no ay cosa en el Mundo, que en ella no se halle.

A. Es así verdad, pero es comunicado de otros reynos, que bien véys vos, que en ella no se cria O'ro ni Plata, no se coje V'no, ni Azéite, Açúcar, Seda, Especería, ni Frutas de las Regaladas, como son Cídras, Limónes, Limas, Naranjas, Granadas, Almendras, y otros mil géneros dellas, muy necesarios para el regalo de las gentes, y como digo dellas pocas cosas, pudiera dezir de otras muchas que dexo.

G. Si, pero tenemos otras, que sirven en lugar de éstas cosas, y así no las echamos menos, como çervéza por v'no, manteca por Azéite, y otras semejantes.

A. Con todo esso, sería imposible poder passar ésto Reyno sin comunicacion con otro. Lo que no tiene España, que sola éntre todas las Provincias del Mundo, podría passar sin Comunicacion con otra, por producir, dentro de si todas las cosas necesarias, a la Vida Humana.

G. Pues, bien os podré yo dezir una cosa, que España no produce.

A. Qual es?

G. Especería, que al fin lo traéis de la India.

A. Tenéis razon, que ésta sola le falta a España, pero, como vos dixístis, también se cria en ella, con que se podría suplir ésta falta.

G. Que es?

A. En lugar de Pimienta, se cria una Yérua que llamamos Pimiento, cuya simiente es de tanta fuerça, y de el propio efecto que la Pimienta, que viene de Indias, en lugar de Clavos, usan muchos de los A'jos, y fino fuéssé por un mal olorçillo que tienen, son mas sabrosos que éssotros, de Açafrán gran Cantidad se coje en España, Gengibre de pocos días acá, se a començado a plantar en ella, y se da bien.

G. Dezime ahora, que os parece, del trato de nuestra gente?

A. Generalmente hablando, toda la Gente Inglesa, es benina, y amorosa. afable, alegre, y Amigos de Regozijos, y Fiestas, agenos de toda Melancolia, como aquéllos, en quien predomina el humor sanguíno; pero fuera de esto, he notado en todos en general tan infaciable Avaricia, que desdora todas sus Virtudes.

G. Y de las Mugéres que dezís?

A. Las Mugéres generalmente hablando, pienso que son las mas hermosas del Mundo, porque tienen todas tres gracias particulares, para sérlo, que son en extremo Blancas, Coloradas, y Rubias, y la que con éstas gracias que son generales a todas, acierta a tener buenas facciones, es acabada en hermosuro: Pero también os digo con la misma generalidad, que tienen tres faltas.

G. Quales son por vida vuestra?

A. No las quitiérais dezir, por no caer, en desgracia con ellas.

G. Yo sálgo por fiador que no caeréis.

A. Tenéis razon, que quien nunca subió, no puede caer, pero las tres faltas son, pequeños O'jos, grandes Bocas, no buena tez en los Róstros, y de esto es la causa el ayre tan frío y sutil, que corre en éstas partes, que se les curte y por ésto es buena la Invençion de las Mascarillas, aunque yo entiendo que no deve de baltar.

G. Vos lo avéis disputado muy bien, y yo os quedo muy aficionado Servidór, y así os suplico, que el tiempo que estuviéredes en esta tierra os sirvais de mi.

A. Yo os doy muchas gracias, por el Ofregimiento, y quedo yo no menos a vueétro servicio, y porque se va haziendo tarde, nos vámos recogiendo a las posadas que ya es ora.

G. Bésó a vueétas merçédes las manos.

D. Yo las de vueétas merçédes.

W. What things are those you say, it wants, for I believe there is not any thing in the world, but may be found in it.

A. That is true, but it is brought from other Countries, for you see it produces neither Gold nor Silver, nor Wine, Oil, Sugar, Silk, Spice, nor the most delicate sorts of Fruit, as Citrons, sweet and sower Lemons, Oranges, Pomegranats, Almonds, and a Thousand other sorts of them, very necessary for the Delight of Man, and as I mention these few things, I could speak of many more which I omit.

W. Yes, but we have others, which serve instead of those things and so we have no miss of them, as Beer for wine, Butter for Oil, and the like.

A. Yet this Kingdom could not possibly subsist without Commerce with others, which is not so with Spain for that alone of all the Countries in the world, could subsist without Commerce with any other, because it produces within its self, all things necessary for Human Life.

W. Yet I can tell you one thing, which Spain affords not.

A. What is it?

W. Spice for you fetch it from the Indies.

A. You are in the right, for Spain wants nothing but that, yet as you said, there grows that in it, which may supply this want.

W. What is it?

A. Instead of Pepper there grows a Plant, which we call Pimiento, that is Guinea-Pepper, whose Seed is as strong, and has the very same Effect, as the Pepper that comes from the Indies. Instead of Cloves, many use Garlick, and if it were not for a little ill Smell they have, they are more savory then the other. Abundance of Saffron grows in Spain. Ginger has been planted of late, and it thrives well.

W. Tell me now, what do you think of our Behaviour.

A. Generally Speaking, all the English are Courteous and Loving, Affable, Merry, and Lovers of Sports and Feasts, free from all Melancholly, as those in whom the Sanguine Humour is predominant; but on the other Hand I have observ'd such an insatiable Avarice in them all as sullies all their other Virtues.

W. And what do you say of the Women?

A. The Women generally speaking, I think the beaurifullest in the World, for they have all the Three special Graces, which make them so, they are Wonderful White, Red and Fair, and she that besides these Graces, which are general to all, happens to have good Features, is Beautiful in Perfection; but I must also tell you as generally, that they have Three Faults.

W. What are they I pray you?

A. I would not willingly tell them lest I incur their Displeasure.

W. I will be bound for you that you shall not.

A. You are in the Right, for he who never got up can never fall, but the Three Faults are little Eyes, great Mouths, and no smooth Skin on the Face, and the Cause of it is the Cold and sharp Wind that blows in these parts, which tans them, and therefore Masks were well invented, tho' I think they have not all the Success that could be wish'd.

W. You have laid it down very well, and I am much your Affectionate Servant, and therefore intreat you that whilst you are in this Country, you command me.

A. I give you many Thanks, for your Offer, and I am no less at your Service, and since it grows late, let us draw towards our Lodgings, for it is time.

W. I kiss your Hands, Gentlemen.

J. And I yours, Gentlemen.

Diálogo Sexto, éntre un Sargénto y un

Cábo de Esqádra, y un Soldádo, en el qual se tráta, de las cosas pertenecientes a la Milícia, y de las calidades que deve tener un buén Soldádo, con muchos dichos graciosos y buenos quéntos.

- Sa. **A** Dónde camina Señor Soldádo?
- So. O Señor Sargénto házia la tabla, si v. m. no manda otra cosa.
- Sa. Lléva muchos Dinéros que jugar?
- So. Mi Pága enterita cómo la recebí, que no he osádo gastar un Real, por no quirárselo al juégo.
- Sa. Esto es de buenos Cofrades, ántes falta pára el cuérpo que pára el juégo.
- So. A que Féria puedo yó yr, en que mas gáne, pues aventúro con quátro Ducados ganar quatro-cientos.
- Sa. Y si el dádo dize mal, allá van Roçín y Mançanas.
- So. Señor o rico pinjádo, o muérto descalabrado.
- Sa. Esta es la cuenta de los perdidos.
- So. Cuérpo de tal Señor, que hijos o Mugér tengo yó que mantener?
- Sa. Si però ne fuera mejor vestírse que jugar el Dinéro?
- So. Yó he hécho mi cuénca, y he meneftér Camisas, Jubón, Sáyo, Calçones, Médias, y çapatos, y Sombrero. y en quátro Ducados, no ay pára todo, pues comprar uno nuevo, y traer lo otro viejo, no parece bien, quéro jugar, quizá ganaré pára comprarlo todo.
- Sa. Y si los pierde, quedárse ha sin lo uno y lo otro.
- So. Señor, preso por mil, preso por mil y quinientos, todo es estar preso, diré entónces, Desnúdo naçí, y Desnúdo me hálló y Desnúdo moriré.
- Sa. Dígame, sabe cuándo entrámos de guardia?
- So. El ita noche le toca a la Compañía.
- Sa. Con que Armas sirve con Pica, o Arcabúz?
- So. Con un Mosquéte de siete palmos.
- Sa. Pues cómo dize, que no sacó mas que quátro Ducados teniendo siete de pága.
- So. Uno me descontaron de pólvora y cuérda los contadores, otro he dádo a mi Camarada pára la despénca désta semana, y otro que se me quitó de los Socórros.
- Sa. Jústa está la cuenta.
- So. Es cómo la del trillo, cada piedra en su agujero.
- Sa. Quántos son de Camarada?
- So. Tres y conmigo quatro.
- Sa. Tántos piés tiene un Gato.
- So. Çinco con Rabo.
- Sa. Tienen buén Aloxiamento?
- So. Tal sea la salud del aposentador que nos le dió.
- Sa. Cómo, no es bueno?
- So. Peór es una çahurda de lechones.
- Sa. Tienen Huéspedeta hermosa?
- So. Hermosa Señor Sargénto, yó pienso que los Diábolos son Seráfines en su comparación.
- Sa. Bueno es el encareçimiento, que talle tiene?
- So. Ella es mas vieja que *Matusalén*, mas arrugada que una Palla, mas fúzia que una Mosca, mas Séca que un Palo, diénte y Muéla, cómo por la mano, la boca Sumida, cómo Ojo de Cúlo, los Ojos el uno Tuérto, y el otro que no se le sacarán con un Garavato, finalmente toda ella es un retráto de la Embidia.
- Sa. Ella tal será único remedio contra luxúria.
- So. Pues es lo bueno, que con todas éstas grácias se afécita y repica.
- Sa. Y v. m. no le háze el amor?
- So. Amor, o que bóto a tal, no la acométa un Tigre.
- Sa. A'nde, que pára un lavadíentes no será mála.
- So. Mas me los quéro traer fúzios que no mal lavállos.
- Sa. Mas yó créo, qués cómo dizen, quién dize mal de la Yé-gua, éste la lléva.
- So. Par diéz, no soy sino cómo la Zorra, que cuándo no pudo alcançar las úvas. dixo úvas de Parra, así cómo así no las avia gana.

The Sixth Dialogue, between a Sergeant, a Corporal, and a Soldier, which speaks of Martial Affairs, and the Qualities requisite to make a good Soldier, with many Witty Expressions and pretty Tales.

- Sa. **W** Hither are you going Master Soldier?
- So. Towards the Gaming Table Master Sergeant, unless you have any other Service to command me.
- Sa. Have you much Money to play away?
- So. My whole Pay as I receiv'd it, for I durst not spend one Royal, lest I should take away so much from Play.
- Sa. That is like a good Companion, let the Body want rather the Play.
- So. What Fair can I go to, where I may get more, for with Four Dukats, I have a Chance to win Four Hundred.
- Sa. If the Die runs ill, there (a) goes Horse and Apples.
- So. Sir, either Hang rich, or Die with a Broken Head.
- Sa. This is a Saying of Rakes.
- So. Ails bobs, Sir, what Children or Wife have I to keep?
- Sa. Ay, but were it not better to cloath your self, then to play away your Money?
- So. I have made my Reckning, I want Shirts, Doublet, Coat, Breeches, Stockings, Shoes, and Hat, and Four Dukats is not enough for all this, then to buy one thing new, and wear another old, is not handsome, I will Play, perhaps I may win to buy all.
- Sa. And if you loose, you must go without one or other.
- So. Sir, over Shoes over Boots, I can but be in, and then will I say, Naked I was Born, Naked I am, and Naked I shall Dye.
- Sa. Tell me, do you know when we are to Mount the Guard?
- So. It is the Companies Turn to Night.
- Sa. What Arms do you carry a Pike or Musket?
- So. A Musket Seven Spans long.
- Sa. Then why did you say, you had but Four Ducats, when your Pay is Seven?
- So. One Ducat was stopp'd by the Paymaster for Powder and Match, another I gave to my Comerade for this Week's Expences, and the other was deducted for Subsistence.
- Sa. The Reckoning is very right.
- So. As smooth as a Threshing Floor, every Stone in its Hole.
- Sa. How many of you Comrade together?
- So. Three, and I make Four.
- Sa. So many Feet has a Cat.
- So. Five with the Tail.
- Sa. Have you good Quarters?
- So. I wish the Quartermaster who provided them may thrive accordingly.
- Sa. How so, are they not good?
- So. A Pig sty is worse.
- Sa. Have you a handsome Landlady?
- So. Handsome Master Sergeant, I believe the Devils are Seraphims compar'd with her.
- Sa. You have said the most of it. What sort of Figure does she make?
- So. She is as Old as Mathusalem, as full of Wrinkles as a Raisin, as Nasty as a (b) Fly, as Lean as a Rike, as for Teeth or Grinders she has no more than my Hand, her Mouth sunk in like an Ase Hole, her Eyes one of them Blind, the other cannot be pull'd out with a long Hook. In short, she is the very Picture of Envy.
- Sa. She must needs be an Antidote against Leachery.
- So. But the best of it is that notwithstanding all these good Qualities she Paints and Dresses.
- Sa. And do you not make Love to her?
- So. Love, I vow to God, a Tiger would not venture upon her.
- Sa. Go your ways she is good enough to wash your Teeth, and spit out again.
- So. I had rather they should be foul than ill wash'd.
- Sa. I am apt to believe, it is as they say, he that discom-mends the Mare carries her away.
- So. By my hand I am rather like the Fox, who when he could not reach the Grapes, said, However I had no Stomack to Grapes.

Sa. Here

(a) A Horse laden with Apples passing a River, was carried away, and so both lost.
 (b) Flies that feed on Filth, and breed out of Corruption.

Sa. Aquí viene el Cabo de Esquadra. Veámos que nuevas trae.
De donde viene Señor Cabo de Esquadra.

Ca. De la bandera.

Sa. Queda allí el Alférez?

C. No Señor, que está en casa de el Capitán.

So. Al Capitán y Alférez déxo yo aora en casa del Maestre de Campo.

Sa. Que nuevas ay por allá?

Ca. Nuevas ciéltas pocas, Mentiras Infinitas.

Sa. Que se dize aora en el cuerpo de Guardia?

Ca. Unos dicen, que nos embarcarémos para correr la costa, otros que que darémos aquí de presidio, otros que yrémos a Irlanda, no ay quien lo entienda.

Sa. Todo ésto es adivinar, cada uno lo que deséa, o le está bien.

Ca. Como dezía el otro Capitán, los Soldados son Profetas del Diablo.

Sa. Y tenía razón, porqué así como el Diablo no sabe lo por venir, sinó que lo conjetura, así hazen ellos: Y entre mil Conjeturas que házen, alguna han de acertar.

Ca. También se suéna que el Réy, arma para ir contra Inglaterra.

So. A'rme en hora buena, que para ésto somos Soldados.

Ca. Tiene razón, que nuésto oficio para la guerra es, que no para la Paz.

Sa. Señor Cabo de Esquadra, váya dígame al atambór que tóque a recoger la Guardia.

Ca. Yó voy aguardeme aquí v. m.

So. Señor Sargento déxeme y'a jugar un ráto antes que se méta la Guardia.

Sa. Tanto le pésa éllé Dinéro, que tal priéssa tiéne por echárló de sí.

So. Yó mas querría doblálo.

Sa. No sabe cómo dize un refrán, si quiéres tener Dinéros tenéllos.

So. De que sirve tener pocos, o Cesar o náda.

Sa. Váya con Diós, y párelo a buen Púnto.

So. Diós me libre de un Azár.

Sa. Y a mi de vellácos en quadrilla, y villá nos en Gavilla, de Mocha Adivina, y de vieja Latina, de Lodos al caminar, y de larga enfermedad, de Párafo de Legista, de Infra de Canonista, de Etcétera de Escrivano, y de Récipe de Médico, de razón de diz que però y finó, y de Senténçia de conque.

Ca. Yá tóca la caja a recoger.

Sa. Vamos éntre tanto a buscár al Sargento Mayor, para que me de el nombre.

Ca. El estará en casa del General.

Sa. Vámos allá, que todo es camino, es menestér que ésta nóche áya muy buena guardia.

Ca. Porqué ay alguna sospécha?

Sa. A'y nuevas de Enemigos, y así es neçessario doblár las Póltas y Reforçárlas, y poner dos o tres Centinélas perdidas y que la Ronda y Contraronda visíten amenúdo.

Ca. Pídan. m. al Sargento Mayor, que nos den leña hártá, para que áya buena Lúmbre en el Cuerpo de Guardia.

Sa. Así será, y todas las A'rmas estarán muy a púnto, que hombre aperçevído, médio combatído.

Ca. Menestér sera dar a los Soldados Pólvora, Cuérda, y Bálas.

Sa. Todo se les dará y órden a los coselétes que no les fálte piéça.

Ca. Quales la mejor A'rma de las que usámos en la Guerra?

Sa. La Píca es la Réyna de las A'rmas.

Ca. Póco valdrían las Pícas, sinó se guarneciéssen con la Arcabuzería, que daña al Enemigo desde afuera.

Sa. Ménos valdría la arcabuzería, si después de dáda la Cárga, no tuviéssé adónde reparárla de la Cavallería Enemiga, y de todos los demás que le procuráren dañar.

Ca. Si, però bien vémos que Mayor daño se le haze al Enemigo con la Arcabuzería, y Mosquetería, que con las Pícas.

Sa. Todo éllé Daño es póco en Comparación del que se reçíbe al desbarate de un Esquadrón o Exército, el qual se seguiría luego con la Cavallería, si las Pícas que es una muralla fuerte, no se pusiéssen a la defénça.

Ca. Por élló compáran a un Esquadrón bien formado, al Cuerpo Humano donde los brazos, y Piénnas, que son los que óbran son los Arcabuzéros y las Pícas, que están siémpre firmes, y es de dó viene virtúd a todas las partes del Esquadrón, el Cuerpo y Coraçón.

Sa. Here comes the Corporal, let us see what News he brings. whence come you Mr. Corporal?

Co. From the Colours.

Sa. Is the Ensign there?

Co. No Sir, he is at the Captains House.

So. I left the Captain and Ensign but now at the Colonels.

Sa. What News is there?

Co. Very little true News, but Abundance of Lyes.

Sa. What do they say now upon the Guard?

Co. Some say, we shall imbarck to scour the Coast, others that we shall stay here in Garrison, others that we shall go for Ireland, no Man can made Head or Tail of it.

Sa. All that is but guessing, as every Man would have it, or as is for his Conveniency.

Co. As a certain Captain said, Soldiers are the Devils Prophets.

Sa. He was in the right, for as the Devil does not know, what is to come, but guesses at it, so do they: And among a Thousand Conjectures they make, some one must hit right.

Co. It is also reported that the King is arming to invade England.

So. Let him Arm in Gods Name, for that is the Business of us Soldiers.

Co. You are in the right, for our Business is War and not Peace.

Sa. Corporal, go bid the Drum beat to the Guard.

Co. I go, stay for me here.

So. Mr. Sergeant, let me go play a while before the Guard mounts.

Sa. Is your Money so heavy, that you are in such haste to be rid of it?

So. I had rather double it.

Sa. Don't you know the Proverb says, if you will have Money keep it.

So. What signifies a little. I'll be Caesar or nothing.

Sa. Go in Gods Name, and set it upon a good Chance.

So. God keep me from a Nick.

Sa. (a) And me from a pack of Knaves, and a Gang of Clowns, from a Fortunetelling Maid, and an Old Woman that speaks Latin, from Dirty Travelling, and from long Sickness; from a Lawyers Pleadings, from a Canonists References, from a Scriveners & ceteras; from a Physicians Recipes; from they say, but and if and from a Sentence with a Proviso.

Co. The Drum beats to Guard.

Sa. Let us go seek out the Major, that he may give me the Word.

Co. It is likely he is at the Generals.

Sa. Let us go thither, for it is all in our way, it is requisite there be a good Guard to Night.

Co. Why, is there any thing to fear?

Sa. There is News of the Enemy, and therefore it is necessary to double the Guards, and to place Two or Three Sentinels Perdue, and that the Rounds and Counter-Round go about thick.

Co. Sir, do you desire the Major, to order us wood enough, that there may be a good Fire upon the Corps de Gard.

Sa. It shall be so, and all the Arms shall to be very ready, for fore warn'd fore arm'd.

Co. The Soldiers must have Powder, Match, and Bullets given them.

Sa. All shall be given them, and Orders to the Men in Armour that they want no Piece of it.

Co. Which is the best Weapon we use in War?

Sa. The Pike is the Queen of Weapons.

Co. Pikes would be worth little, were not they lind with Shot, which does the Enemy harm at a Distance.

Sa. The Shot would be worth less, if after Firing their Volleys, they had not something to cover them from the Enemies Horse, and from all others, that should endeavour to hurt them.

Co. Yes, but we plainly see there is more harm done by the Musketers and Firelocks than by the Pikes.

S. All that Damage is inconsiderable if compar'd with what is receiv'd, when a Battalion, or Army is routed, which would be soon done by the Horse, did not the Pikes like a strong Wall interpose to defend them.

C. Therefore it is that a Battalion well drawn up is compar'd, to a Mans Body, where the Arms and Legs which are those that All are the Musketers, and the Pikes which always stand fast and give Strength to all parts of the Battalion are compar'd to the Body and Heart.

Sa. Así

(a) A Prayer to be deliver'd from all Trouble, as Knaves and Clowns, Talkative Wenches, impertinent Old Women, bad Ways, Diseases, Law-Sutes of all sorts, Physick, impertinent Talk, and any sort of Sentence.

Sa. Ahí es, y aún si miráis la forma de un Esquadrón de los Ordinarios formado, con sus mangas, hallaréis en él, la misma forma del Cuerpo Humano.

Ca. Que partes se requiere que tenga un buen Soldado.

Sa. Muchas, y muchos escribieron de ésta materia, pero las mas necesarias y ordinarias, y ó las diré. El Soldado, quanto a lo primero, deve ser muy homoso, porque Soldado sin honra ferá de ningún provecho, pues élla es la espuela que le ha de hazer obrar lo que no bástan premios, ni ruegos, ni amenazas de sus Oficiales.

Ca. Por ésto, deve el Soldado traer, siémpre escrita en la frente aquella coplilla que dize, por la honra pon la vida, y pon las dor, honra y vida por tu Dios.

S. Lo Segundo deve ser el Soldado valiente no temeroso ni cobárde.

Ca. El Soldado cobárde mas propriamente se podría llamar espantajo, al qual quando los páxaros le piéden una vez el miedo, alientan encima del, o cómo el Réy de las Ráνας.

S. Cómo es ésto del Réy de las Ráņas?

Ca. Dízen, que (a) en tiempo de Maricastaña, las Ráņas deshearon tener Réy como todas las demás Naciones, y pidieron a Jupiter que éra Réy de los dióses que les diéssé Réy, el qual viendo su neçedad quiso burlar déllas, y díxoles que para un día señalado les daría Réy. Ellas le esperávan con grande alegría, y venido aquél día, salieron todas, de sus casas, muy compuestas, cómo convenia para rezebir a su Réy y pusieronse en la superficie del agua esperando. En este tiempo Jupiter arrojó desde el cielo, un gran madéro, y dió con él, en la laguna donde, éllas estávan, tan gran golpe, y hizo tan gran ruido que éllas fueron todas turbadas, y asombradas, y unas por aquí, y otras por allí, cada una huyó a su casa, sin osar llegar, a hazer a su Réy el devido acatamiento, ni salir fuera en muchos días. Quedóse el madéro nadando encima del agua, y éllas con tanto temor de ver cosa tan grande, que ninguna osóva salir fuera de su casa, y allí morían de hambre, hasta que poco a poco fué saliendo la mas esforçada, y siguiéndola las demás, cada día yvan perdiendo mas el temor, y se yvan llegando cerca de su Réy, viéndole a el tan manso y que no se movía, ni les dezía mala palabra. Al fin tanto continuaron y (cómo la mucha conversacion es causa de menoscupio) se llegaron a su Réy y viendo todas lo que éra, saltaron encima del, y comenzaron a chirriar y dar grandes risadas, haziendo burla de su Réy, y de su temor pasado. Bolviéron pues, a insultar a Jupiter que en todo caso les diéssé Réy no tan manso, sino que fuéssé justiciero. Jupiter viendo su neçia porfia les embió por Réy a la Ciguëña, la qual Reyna hasta oy éntre éllas, cebándose y comiéndolas cada día, en pena de su loca petición, pues pudiendo vivir libres quisieron mas hazer se esclavas y mas un Réy cruel, que manso y benigno.

Sa. No ha estado malo el cuento, y mejor es la moralidad.

Ca. Dexémos ésto aora, y prosiga v. m. adelante con su plática del buen Soldado.

Sa. Lo tercero que ha de tener ha de ser gran sufridor de trabajos, y para ésto deve ser de rezia Complexión.

Ca. Y al que ésto no tuviere, el Diablo le truxo a la Guerra, cómo dizen de el moço vergonzoso, que el Diablo le trájó a Palasio.

Sa. Deve tambien ser muy obediente a sus Oficiales, y que haga de buena gana y sin mostrar mal Rostro lo que le ordenaren siendo del Servicio de su Principe.

Ca. Quítenle a la Milicia la obediencia en los Soldados, y bolviese ha en Confusion Babilónica.

Sa. Otras muchas particularidades, ha de tener el buen Soldado, que yo no quiero tratar aora, quien las quisiere ver, lea quatro o cinco tratados que andan dello en Lengua Española, uno del Capitan Martin de Eguiluz, y otro de Escalante, otro de Don Fernando de Córdova, y otro de Don Bernardino de Mendoza, que allí lo verá bien pintado.

Ca. Aquí buélve nuestro Mosquetéro; muy cabizbajo viene, perdido deve de aver.

Sa. A Señor Soldado una palabra.

S. Déxeme v. m. Señor Sargento, bástame mi mala ventura.

Sa. Que ha sido, perdióse toda el Armada?

S. No topára yo aquí aora con el vellaco que éste juego invento?

Sa. Que le quería dezir?

S. Remégo del Diablo, sino le avia de hazer mas tajadas que puntos se han echado en los dados después que el los invento.

Sa. Ésto me parece echar la culpa del asno a la albarda, quien le mandó a v. m. jugar?

S. It is so, and further if you observe the shape of a Battalion as usually drawn up with its Pelotons, you will find in it the very shape of a Human Body.

C. What parts are requisite to make a good Soldier?

S. Many, and many have writ on that Subject, but the most necessary and obvious I will tell you. A Soldier in the first Place must have a great deal of Honour, because a Soldier without Honour would be useless, for that is the Spur which pricks him on to do that, which neither rewards, nor intreaties, nor threats of his Officers, would prevail with him to do.

C. Therefore a Soldier ought always to have those Lines written on his Forehead, which say, Lay down your Life, for your Honour, and both Life and Honour for your God.

Sa. Secondly, a Soldier must be valiant, and not fearful or a Coward.

Co. A Cowardly Soldier might better be call'd a Scarecrow, which when once the Birds have learnt not to fear, they sit upon it, or else he is like the King of the Frogs.

Sa. How is that of the King of Frogs?

Co. They say, that in old times, when the Beasts could speak, the Frogs desir'd to have a King, as other Nations had, and they desir'd Jove, who was King of the Gods, to give them a King, who perceiving their Folly, thought to make sport with them, and told them that by a Day appointed, he would give them a King. They expected it, with much Joy, and when the Day was come, they all came out of their Houses, in great Order as was fit to receive their King, and waited on the Superficies of the Water. Then Jove cast a great Log of Wood down from Heaven into the Water, where they were, which made such a Splash and Noise, that they were all in a fright and amaz'd, and some fled one way, and some another, to their Houses, without daring to draw near to pay their Respects to their King, or to come abroad for several Days. The Log lay swimming in the Water, and they so full of fear, to see such a great thing, that none of them durst come out of their Houses, and were ready to starve in them, till by Degrees the Boldest ventur'd out, and the rest following, they daily grew less and less afraid, and began to draw near to their King, seeing him so tame, and that he said not a hard Word to them. In short, they went on so long, and much Familiarity breeding Contempt, came up to their King, and then perceiving what he was, they all leapt upon him, and began to croak and laugh out, scoffing at their King. This done, they again press'd Jove to give them a King by all means, and not so tame, but that would execute Justice. Jove perceiving their Foolish Impertunity gave them the Stork for a King, who still reigns over them, feeding on, and eating them up daily, to punish them for their mad Request, because being free, they rather chose to be Slaves, and that to a cruel King before a mild and meek one.

Sa. The Tale is not amiss, and the Moral is better.

Co. Let us leave that at present, and do you go on with your Discourse, concerning a good Soldier.

Sa. In the Third Place he must endure much Fatigue, and to this Purpose ought to be of a strong Constitution.

Co. And the Devil brought him to the War, who wants that Quality, as they say of a Modest Youth, that the Devil carried him to Court.

Sa. He must also be very obedient to his Officers, and fulfill all their Commands willingly, and without showing any Dislike, when they are for his Princes Service.

Co. Deprive Martial Discipline of Obedience in Soldiers, and it will be like the Confusion of Babel.

Sa. A good Soldier is to have many other Qualifications, which I will not now speak of, whosoever desires to see them, may read four or five Treatises, there are of it in Spanish, one writ by Captain Martin de Eguiluz, another by Escalante, another by Don Fernando de Córdova, and another by Don Bernardino de Mendoza, where he will find all punctually set down.

Co. Here comes our Muskettier again, he bangs down his Head, I suppose he has lost.

Sa. Mr. Soldier a Word with you.

So. Let me alone Mr. Sergeant, my Ill Luck is Plague enough to me.

Sa. What is the matter, is the whole Cargo lost?

So. I would I could find the Rave that invented this Game.

Sa. What would you say to him?

So. I renounce the Devil if I would not cut him into more Bits, than there have been Casts thrown on the Dice, since he invented them.

Sa. That to me looks like laying the Fault of the Ass on the Pack-Saddle. Who bid you play, Sir?

60

(a) Tiempo de Mari-Castaña, is a Vulgar Expression, signifying only in the Day old.

So. El Diablo que no duérme, y anda tras hazérme desesperar para llevárme.
 Sa. Pues mire, no le créa, sinó quando vénga, dígame que por aóra no puede yr, que está ocupado en Servizio de su Magestad, que se buélva otro día, y sinó quisiere deshágale la horquilla en la Cabeça.
 So. Muý buéno va ésto, estóy yó rabiando y estáse v. m. burlando de mi.
 Sa. Mire, yó le daré un buén remedio, tome dos onças de Jarave de Paciençia. y quatro de unguento de olvido y bévalo todo, y con ésto purgará éssa Malancolia y quedará luego buéno.
 So. Serán dos purgas, una tras otra, después de purgada la bólsa purgar el cuerpo.
 Sa. Pues nunca ha oydo dezir, que un clávo sáca otro, y una mano lava otra y entrámbas la Cara.
 So. Mas siémpre después de ydo el conéjo viéne el consejo.
 Sa. Aóra bién, quién yerra y se enmiénda a Diós se encomiéndz.
 So. La enmiénda será empenar el capotillo, para bolvérme a esquitár si puedo.
 Sa. Éssa no será enmiénda, sinó obstinación.
 So. Aquí perdí una agúja, aquí la tengo de hallar.
 Sa. No véis pecador que se os cayó en la mar éssa agúja, cómo la queréis hallar?
 So. Yó me tengo de yr a una hechizera, que me de una sóga de ahorcado, que dízen que es buena para hazer ganar.
 Ca. Castigame mi Mádre y yó trómpofelas.
 Sa. Aóra Señor, vámos a metér la guárdia, que después se tratará désto.
 Ca. Váya a llamar sus Camaradas.
 So. Yó vóy, béso a vuestras merçedes las manos.
 Ca. Yó también quiero yr por mis A'rimas.
 Sa. Yó me vóy a la vandéra, allí esperaré.

So. The Devil who sleeps not, and contrives to make me despair, that he may take me.
 Sa. Then mind me, do not believe him, but when he comes tell him, you cannot go at present, that you are busy in His Majesty's Service, that he may come another Day, and if he will not, break the rest of your Musket on his Head.
 Sc. Very well, Sir, I am ready to run Mad, and you jeer me.
 Sa. Observe me, and I'll prescribe you a good Remedy, Take Two Ounces of the Sirrup of Patience, and four Ounces of the Oil of Forgetfulness, and drink it off, and that will purge away this Melancholly, and you'll be presently well.
 So. That will be Two Purges one after another, after Purging the Purse to purge the Body.
 Sa. Have you never heard that one Nail drives out another, and one Hand washes another, and both of them the Face.
 So. But always after the Steed is stolen, shut the Stable-Door.
 Sa. Well, he that does Ill and mends, is in a good way.
 So. My Mending shall be that I'll pawn my Coat to be reveng'd if I can.
 Sa. That will not be mending, but meer Obstinacy.
 So. Here I lost a Needle, and here I will find it again.
 Sa. Don't you consider you VVretch, (a) that your Needle dropt into the Sea, how can you expect to find it again.
 So. I will go to a VVitch to give me a Halter a Man has been hang'd in, which they say is lucky.
 Co. My Mother corrects me, and I make Sport at her, Mock and Mew at it.
 Sa. well, Sir, let us go mount the Guard, and we'll talk of that afterwards.
 Co. Go call your Comerades.
 So. I go, I kiss your Hands Gentlemen.
 Co. And I will go for my Arms.
 Sa. I'll go to the Colours, there I'll stay for you.

(a) The Spanish Proverbs here show the Folly of Gamesters, and this last expresses the Impossibility of regaining what is lost.

F I N I S.

